

鬼 戒 解  
家 布 一 截



君向月臨神於市裏，千年遺跡斷難尋。  
君向市門心隨我夢，日處神光少自留。  
——唐詩僧 皎然《題天竺寺》

资料来源:根据《2008 年中国统计年鉴》整理。

可要是早知道我遇見的人是傷



冤家路解  
劫一截



1997年12月1日 星期三

1997, 1998, 1999, 2000, 2001, 2002, 2003, 2004, 2005, 2006, 2007, 2008, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2012, 2013, 2014, 2015, 2016, 2017, 2018, 2019, 2020, 2021, 2022, 2023, 2024, 2025, 2026, 2027, 2028, 2029, 2030, 2031, 2032, 2033, 2034, 2035, 2036, 2037, 2038, 2039, 2040, 2041, 2042, 2043, 2044, 2045, 2046, 2047, 2048, 2049, 2050, 2051, 2052, 2053, 2054, 2055, 2056, 2057, 2058, 2059, 2060, 2061, 2062, 2063, 2064, 2065, 2066, 2067, 2068, 2069, 2070, 2071, 2072, 2073, 2074, 2075, 2076, 2077, 2078, 2079, 2080, 2081, 2082, 2083, 2084, 2085, 2086, 2087, 2088, 2089, 2090, 2091, 2092, 2093, 2094, 2095, 2096, 2097, 2098, 2099, 2100, 2101, 2102, 2103, 2104, 2105, 2106, 2107, 2108, 2109, 2110, 2111, 2112, 2113, 2114, 2115, 2116, 2117, 2118, 2119, 2120, 2121, 2122, 2123, 2124, 2125, 2126, 2127, 2128, 2129, 2130, 2131, 2132, 2133, 2134, 2135, 2136, 2137, 2138, 2139, 2140, 2141, 2142, 2143, 2144, 2145, 2146, 2147, 2148, 2149, 2150, 2151, 2152, 2153, 2154, 2155, 2156, 2157, 2158, 2159, 2160, 2161, 2162, 2163, 2164, 2165, 2166, 2167, 2168, 2169, 2170, 2171, 2172, 2173, 2174, 2175, 2176, 2177, 2178, 2179, 2180, 2181, 2182, 2183, 2184, 2185, 2186, 2187, 2188, 2189, 2190, 2191, 2192, 2193, 2194, 2195, 2196, 2197, 2198, 2199, 2200, 2201, 2202, 2203, 2204, 2205, 2206, 2207, 2208, 2209, 2210, 2211, 2212, 2213, 2214, 2215, 2216, 2217, 2218, 2219, 2220, 2221, 2222, 2223, 2224, 2225, 2226, 2227, 2228, 2229, 2230, 2231, 2232, 2233, 2234, 2235, 2236, 2237, 2238, 2239, 2240, 2241, 2242, 2243, 2244, 2245, 2246, 2247, 2248, 2249, 2250, 2251, 2252, 2253, 2254, 2255, 2256, 2257, 2258, 2259, 2260, 2261, 2262, 2263, 2264, 2265, 2266, 2267, 2268, 2269, 2270, 2271, 2272, 2273, 2274, 2275, 2276, 2277, 2278, 2279, 2280, 2281, 2282, 2283, 2284, 2285, 2286, 2287, 2288, 2289, 2290, 2291, 2292, 2293, 2294, 2295, 2296, 2297, 2298, 2299, 2300, 2301, 2302, 2303, 2304, 2305, 2306, 2307, 2308, 2309, 2310, 2311, 2312, 2313, 2314, 2315, 2316, 2317, 2318, 2319, 2320, 2321, 2322, 2323, 2324, 2325, 2326, 2327, 2328, 2329, 2330, 2331, 2332, 2333, 2334, 2335, 2336, 2337, 2338, 2339, 2340, 2341, 2342, 2343, 2344, 2345, 2346, 2347, 2348, 2349, 2350, 2351, 2352, 2353, 2354, 2355, 2356, 2357, 2358, 2359, 2360, 2361, 2362, 2363, 2364, 2365, 2366, 2367, 2368, 2369, 2370, 2371, 2372, 2373, 2374, 2375, 2376, 2377, 2378, 2379, 2380, 2381, 2382, 2383, 2384, 2385, 2386, 2387, 2388, 2389, 2390, 2391, 2392, 2393, 2394, 2395, 2396, 2397, 2398, 2399, 2400, 2401, 2402, 2403, 2404, 2405, 2406, 2407, 2408, 2409, 2410, 2411, 2412, 2413, 2414, 2415, 2416, 2417, 2418, 2419, 2420, 2421, 2422, 2423, 2424, 2425, 2426, 2427, 2428, 2429, 2430, 2431, 2432, 2433, 2434, 2435, 2436, 2437, 2438, 2439, 2440, 2441, 2442, 2443, 2444, 2445, 2446, 2447, 2448, 2449, 2450, 2451, 2452, 2453, 2454, 2455, 2456, 2457, 2458, 2459, 2460, 2461, 2462, 2463, 2464, 2465, 2466, 2467, 2468, 2469, 2470, 2471, 2472, 2473, 2474, 2475, 2476, 2477, 2478, 2479, 2480, 2481, 2482, 2483, 2484, 2485, 2486, 2487, 2488, 2489, 2490, 2491, 2492, 2493, 2494, 2495, 2496, 2497, 2498, 2499, 2500, 2501, 2502, 2503, 2504, 2505, 2506, 2507, 2508, 2509, 2510, 2511, 2512, 2513, 2514, 2515, 2516, 2517, 2518, 2519, 2520, 2521, 2522, 2523, 2524, 2525, 2526, 2527, 2528, 2529, 2530, 2531, 2532, 2533, 2534, 2535, 2536, 2537, 2538, 2539, 2540, 2541, 2542, 2543, 2544, 2545, 2546, 2547, 2548, 2549, 2550, 2551, 2552, 2553, 2554, 2555, 2556, 2557, 2558, 2559, 2560, 2561, 2562, 2563, 2564, 2565, 2566, 2567, 2568, 2569, 2570, 2571, 2572, 2573, 2574, 2575, 2576, 2577, 2578, 2579, 2580, 2581, 2582, 2583, 2584, 2585, 2586, 2587, 2588, 2589, 2590, 2591, 2592, 2593, 2594, 2595, 2596, 2597, 2598, 2599, 2600, 2601, 2602, 2603, 2604, 2605, 2606, 2607, 2608, 2609, 2610, 2611, 2612, 2613, 2614, 2615, 2616, 2617, 2618, 2619, 2620, 2621, 2622, 2623, 2624, 2625, 2626, 2627, 2628, 2629, 2630, 2631, 2632, 2633, 2634, 2635, 2636, 2637, 2638, 2639, 2640, 2641, 2642, 2643, 2644, 2645, 2646, 2647, 2648, 2649, 2650, 2651, 2652, 2653, 2654, 2655, 2656, 2657, 2658, 2659, 2660, 2661, 2662, 2663, 2664, 2665, 2666, 2667, 2668, 2669, 2670, 2671, 2672, 2673, 2674, 2675, 2676, 2677, 2678, 26

叫「雙星」的這批酒鬼的人數則

THE

# Union Of Enemies

## Table of Contents

- 1. [One](#)
- 2. [part 1](#)
- 3. [part 2](#)
- 4. [Three](#)
- 5. [part 1](#)
- 6. [part 2](#)
- 7. [Five](#)
- 8. [Six](#)
- 9. [Seven](#)
- 10. [Eight](#)
- 11. [part 1](#)
- 12. [part 2](#)
- 13. [Ten](#)
- 14. [Eleven](#)
- 15. [Twelve](#)
- 16. [Thirteen](#)
- 17. [Fourteen](#)
- 18. [Fifteen](#)
- 19. [part 1](#)
- 20. [part 2](#)
- 21. [part 1](#)
- 22. [part 2](#)
- 23. [Eighteen](#)
- 24. [Nineteen](#)
- 25. [Twenty](#)
- 26. [Twenty-One](#)

27. [Twenty-Two](#)
28. [Twenty-Three](#)
29. [Twenty-Four](#)
30. [Twenty-Five](#)
31. [Twenty-Six](#)
32. [Twenty-Seven](#)
33. [Twenty-Eight](#)
34. [Twenty-Nine](#)
35. [Thirty](#)
36. [Thirty-One](#)
37. [Thirty-Two](#)
38. [Thirty-Three](#)
39. [Thirty-Four](#)
40. [Thirty-Five](#)
41. [Thirty-Six](#)
42. [Thirty-Seven](#)
43. [Thirty-Eight](#)
44. [Thirty-Nine](#)
45. [Forty](#)
46. [Forty-One](#)
47. [Forty-Two](#)
48. [Forty-Three](#)
49. [Forty-Four](#)
50. [Forty-Five](#)
51. [Forty-Six](#)
52. [Side Story One](#)
53. [Side Story Two](#)
54. [Side Story Three](#)
55. [part 1](#)
56. [part 2](#)
57. [Side Story Five](#)
58. [part 1](#)
59. [part 2](#)
60. [Side Story Seven](#)

# One

## Chapter One

Fated enemies' first verbal promise, twenty years ago...

On the ground floor of an old apartment complex were public laundry rooms and bathrooms for tenants, which facilitated hot water. During most mornings, housewives bathed their young children and afterward they let their children play whilst they washed their families' dirty clothes.

Twenty years ago two housewives, Mrs Gu and Mrs Zhen were washing clothes next to each other in the laundry room.

'Little sister Gu, what floor are you on?' Mrs Zhen asked.

'Fourth floor, west side,' Mrs Gu said.

'Really? What a coincidence! I'm on the fourth floor too, on the east side,' Mrs Zhen said.

'Oh? That means we're neighbours,' Mrs Gu said.

'Then we'll need to take good care of each other,' Mrs Zhen said.

'That's right!' Mrs Gu said.

Mrs Gu and Mrs Zhen got along well and they were elated to find out they were neighbours. They chatted happily whilst they washed clothes.

'Ah!' a child cried out.

Mrs Gu and Mrs Zhen turned around to see whether it was their young daughter or son who cried out.

A naked chubby little girl covered in soap bubbles, dragged something with her into the laundry room. In her chubby hand she wasn't holding a hand or gripping a shoulder... she was holding a little boy's 'taboo' between his legs.

'Mum!' the little girl called. She ran to her mum and she spoke loudly. 'What's this? Why does Zhen Lang have one but I don't have one?'

The laundry room was steamy and it was hard to see things from a distance

clearly so when Mrs Gu's daughter stood in front of her, she looked closely at what her daughter was holding... she immediately scolded her daughter loudly. 'Gu Jing, let go of it right now!'

The little chubby Gu Jing puffed her chubby cheeks and pouted her lips. 'I don't want to. Why does Zhen Lang get to have one but I don't? Is it because when you found me from a rubbish bin you left something behind?'

Mrs Gu panicked when she saw her stubborn daughter was determined to hold onto her neighbour's pitiful son's 'taboo' between his legs, she quickly gripped her daughter's wrist. 'Hurry up and let go! You're going to break Zhen Lang's 'toy' if you keep holding onto it tightly.'

'I don't want to!' Gu Jing protested. Because she wanted to protect her new favourite toy instead of letting it go, she held onto it tighter. 'This toy is soft and it's fun to play with. I want one too. Mum, tell Zhen Lang to give it to me.'

The pitiful little Zhen Lang cried a waterfall of tears. 'Mum, it hurts...'

Mrs Zhen patted her pitiful son's shoulder. 'Mum, I don't need it, it hurts... give it to Gu Jing.'

'Gu Jing,' Mrs Zhen called. She gently patted little Gu Jing's chubby cheek. 'You have to wait until you and Zhen Lang are adults then he can give it to you.'

'Really?' Gu Jing asked. Her eyes lit up and after a blink, her eyes looked suspiciously at her new favourite toy. 'What if when Zhen Lang's an adult, he gives it someone else?'

'Then you need to always stay close to him and don't let him give it to someone else. What do you think?' Mrs Zhen said and her eyes gleamed mischievously.

Gu Jing nodded her head and she reluctantly let go of her new favourite toy. 'Zhen Lang, you have to promise me in the future you can only give this toy to me, you can't give it to someone else.'

Zhen Lang cried and nodded his head as a promise at the same time.

Gu Jing looked at Zhen Lang and her naughty mind told her eventually the toy would be hers so she needed to comfort Zhen Lang who was keeping it safely for

her until she was an adult.

Gu Jing rubbed Zhen Lang's wet cheek. 'If I give you a kiss, don't cry anymore, ok?'

Zhen Lang tilted his head to the side, he thought for a while and he nodded his head.

Gu Jing beamed and she kissed Zhen Lang's cheek loudly.

Mrs Zhen patted her son's head. 'Gu Jing gave you a kiss so you need to give her a kiss too.'

Zhen Lang sniffed his nose, he looked at the smiling Gu Jing and he reluctantly gave her kiss.

The first time Gu Jing and Zhen Lang exchanged a verbal promise with each other they were only three years old.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter One

***Related***



# part 1

## Chapter Two (Part 1)

At the heart of a CBD was a fancy photo studio, which catered exclusively for female clients. Although many people pass by the studio but it wasn't bustling in the studio, because majority of the studio's clients were booked in by appointments. The renowned eccentric photographer was fussy about which clients to accept and often delay developing photos for half a year after a client's photos were taken.

On another quiet day at the studio, a lazy tomboy reclined on a chair. One hand propped her chin and the other hand tapped on a glass table. Her elongated legs were propped on the adjacent chair, and her short soft hair bounced in sync with the tapping of her hand.

The lazy tomboy wore a silk white shirt with the two top buttons opened and revealed a beautiful collarbone. She wore tight black trousers on her long legs. At a glimpse she looked like a French aristocrat from the eighteenth century but if a sword was attached to her waist, she'd look like a young handsome knight.

'Who's there?' the tomboy asked hoarsely.

The tomboy sighed. She squinted her eyes, gritted her teeth, she glared at a young lady who disturbed her rest. The young lady was her friend and also the owner of the fancy studio's fittings and photography equipment.

The young lady strutted toward her tomboy friend and she looked suspiciously at the box of cough drops on the glass table. 'What's wrong? Your throat hurts? You didn't have a good rest last night, right?'

The tomboy popped a cough drop into her mouth, cleared her throat but her voice was still hoarse.

'Yesterday my mum called and she said she wants to travel a thousand miles away from home to visit me,' the tomboy said hoarsely through gritted teeth. 'She emphasised it'll be more convenient for her to check my living situation.'

'So you were too anxious to sleep? Then you were hot and bothered enough to

burn your throat?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked. The studio lighting reflected off her pearly fingernails whilst she laughed loudly. ‘Did just the thought of living in the same place with that person wilt you? And that’s why you’re here early in the morning to mope?’

‘Who said I’m wilted?’ the tomboy protested. She shot up from the chair like a chicken’s head avoiding a chopping board. ‘I’m preoccupied about thinking how to knockout that weakling in one blow and send him flying straight to the hospital.’

Peng Cheng Gui smiled deviously and she gazed outside the window. ‘Isn’t he in the hospital across from us? If you actually wanted to hit him, you don’t need more than two minutes to do so. Or is it you don’t have the heart to knock him out?’

The tomboy waved a fisted hand in front of Peng Cheng Gui. ‘Peng-Cheng-Gui! Don’t provoke me!’

Peng Cheng Gui ignored her friend’s idle threat and she pushed her friend’s fisted hand aside. She shook her head helplessly. ‘I don’t understand you. If you’ve been enemies with him for eighteen generations then why do both of you feel the need to deceive both your parents about it? Both of you shouldn’t pretend there’s deep affections between each other. Isn’t it simpler if both of you avoid each other until death?’

The tomboy wrinkled her forehead. ‘That year his mum cried a river of tears and asked me to take good care of him. If we want to turn our backs on each other, he has to be the one to initiate it, not me.’

‘You actually count that as a legitimate reason?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked skeptically.

‘Doesn’t it count as a reason?’ the tomboy protested.

‘Count?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

‘Doesn’t it count?’ the tomboy asked.

The two friends participated in a staring showdown to defend their own opinion.

Peng Cheng Gui surrendered because she didn't want to continue a pointless quarrel and there was business to attend to. 'Today don't you have at least three appointments? Why are you still wasting energy in vain with me? Quickly prepare for the shoots.'

'Peng Cheng Gui, explain it to me clearly, what's wrong with my reason?' the tomboy said.

Peng Cheng Gui looked up at the ceiling and she sighed. 'Can you just pretend we never had this conversation?'

'I can't,' the tomboy said.

Peng Cheng Gui knew, just by mentioning about that person, her friend would be excessively unreasonable and her friend would pointlessly crawl into a dead end. She looked at her friend's beautiful eyes that were like two active volcanoes ready to erupt, she could only hope that in the next few days no one would dare to tease her friend who was in a volatile state. Otherwise she was scared for her life if she was within a five metre radius when her friend exploded.

But the heavens didn't hear her silent plea.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Two (Part 1)

***Related***

## part 2

### Chapter Two (Part 2 of 2)

The front glass door of the studio was pushed opened. Gu Jing and Peng Cheng Gui turned around and they saw an unexpected guest. The guest was an unfriendly beefy chested man and he strode into the studio.

‘Who’s the boss here?’ the man asked. ‘I heard there’s a famous handsome photographer here. Where is he? I want to meet him.’

Peng Cheng Gui glanced at Gu Jing and she swallowed her saliva. ‘Gentleman, this is a studio for females only so please leave. If you want your photos taken, take a left turn outside and within twenty steps there’s a studio that caters for wedding and male photos.’

The man glared at Gu Jing. ‘If male guests aren’t allowed here then what’s he doing here?’

‘Um, about... let’s go outside and talk. Otherwise when the female clients arrive to change their clothes they’ll be given a fright,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

The man noticed a camera hung around Gu Jing’s neck and he pointed it a finger at Gu Jing. ‘So you’re the famous photographer.’

Peng Cheng Gui didn’t get to reply, because the man fisted their hands and he stood in front of Gu Jing. ‘Good, you’re here. I’ve been looking for.’ The man aimed a fist at Gu Jing. ‘You’ve spellbound my girlfriend and made her dazed all day. You even got her to undress and took photos of her. Today I’m going to beat you to death!’

‘Bam! Pow...’

The sounds of punches and kicks echoed in the recently renovated studio. After the fight the studio became a rubbish dump, glass fittings were smashed, lighting equipment were knocked over and the man realised Peng Cheng Gui’s warning wasn’t a joke.

Peng Cheng Gui slowly uncovered her face and her face paled at the unrecognisable state of the studio. ‘Ah! I told you not to! My studio! My

portraits! My new round glass table!’

Gu Jing wiped the sweat off her forehead with her long snow white fingers. ‘I’ll go prepare for work.’

Peng Cheng Gui wanted to cry and grieve for her studio. She wanted to demand compensation from Gu Jing. ‘The renovations for the studio was just finished last week. The money you owe me from last time, you still haven’t paid me back!’

Gu Jing ignored Peng Cheng Gui’s idle threat and Gu Jing walked toward the darkroom. Peng Cheng Gui turned her attentions to the man who didn’t listen to good advice and he was still groaning flat on the floor. ‘I warned you not to fight. Do you have any idea who your opponent was? Your opponent was shortlisted to be on the national Taekwondo Olympics team!’

The man struggled to lift his head off the floor, his face was bruised black and blue, he had a hand pressed on his stomach and struggled to open his mouth too. ‘Can you help call an ambulance for me?’

The beautiful Peng Cheng Gui instantly regained her spirits and she smiled in a cooperative manner. ‘I can.’

The man laid his head back down on the floor and he groaned. ‘Thank you.’

‘But you need to give me an answer before I call an ambulance. This glass table is two thousand Yuan, service fee is one hundred Yuan, cleaning fee is two hundred Yuan and a local phone call is four Yuan,’ Peng Cheng Gui said whilst she added the total bill on a calculator. ‘All together it’s two thousand, three hundred and four Yuan. Rounding it off makes it two thousand, three hundred and ten Yuan.’

‘Why do I have to pay? It was clearly your employee who hit me, he was the one who destroyed the glass table,’ the man said.

‘You’re not going to pay? It’s ok if you don’t pay. I’ll just spread the truth about a first year college man was beaten badly by a girl on a one on one fight to the point he couldn’t call an ambulance himself. Mmm... but you look like someone who’s a boss of an underground brotherhood-’

‘You... what did you say?’ the man asked.

‘Oh, you haven’t heard of Gu Jing’s name? No wonder you dared to come here and caused trouble,’ Peng Cheng Gui said. She poked the man’s bruised forehead and she sighed. ‘Compared to our step-aunt, a fight taking place here every two months doesn’t come as fast. You’re an unlucky man, you came at the wrong time when she was in an emotional state and you provoked her too! You deserved the beating.’

‘She’s a girl? How can a girl hit and kick as hard as she can wasn’t chose for the national Taekwondo Olympic team? I should have brought at least two of my men here with me,’ the man said.

Peng Cheng Gui checked her surroundings to make sure Gu Jing wasn’t within hearing distance. ‘Because when she was about to go to her trial for a spot on the Taekwondo Olympic team, a young man schemed against her and she didn’t make it to her trial.’

‘That young man, is he still alive?’ the man asked.

Peng Cheng Gui nodded her head. ‘Alive, he’s living a very good life.’

The paramedics arrived and they carefully lifted the man onto the stretcher, but the man grabbed Peng Cheng Gui’s arm. ‘Tell who that young man is, I want to hire him as my master.’

Peng Cheng Gui retrieved her hand and she waved farewell to the man on the stretcher. ‘Don’t worry, you’ll get to meet him. Remember his name is Zhen Lang.’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Two (Part 2 of 2)

***Related***

# Three

## Chapter Three

‘Doctor Zhen,’ a young pretty nurse called. She fluttered her eyelashes under a thick layer of mascara. ‘Mr Wang’s back for another check up, he requested to see you.’

Zhen Lang lifted his head from reading a patient’s medical file. He wore a white collar shirt and trousers. He wore glasses on his nose, which made him look as stern as his work attitude. ‘Ok.’ He nodded his head. ‘I’ll be right there.’

The young nurse was mesmerised by his smooth voice and she stood on the same spot by Zhen Lang’s office door.

Zhen Lang lifted his head again when he noticed the young nurse didn’t leave. ‘Is there anything else?’

‘Uh...’ the young nurse said and she blushed. ‘I... I wanted to ask you if you wanted to eat something, Mr Wang brought a lot of gifts, I can bring you the edible gifts.’

Zhen Lang smiled politely and nodded his head. ‘Ok, thank you.’

The young nurse flew off. Zhen Lang took off his glasses and put it on his desk. He stood, looked outside his office window, his stern eyes softened and he smiled brightly.

Zhen Lang propped his palms on the windowsill. He liked that his office was on the fifth floor of the hospital and it gave him a clear city view. He could see the best city restaurant and cafe across the road and most importantly – Girl Studio, a famous studio in the city.

An ambulance was parked outside the studio and it quickly returned to the hospital. Zhen Lang smiled and sighed at the same time, he pitied the unlucky man who encountered a fierce opponent.

Zhen Lang glanced at the clock on the wall, it was still early but he didn’t know how much longer Gu Jing could restrain herself. Because yesterday he received a phone call from his mum who informed him that aunty Gu was going visit him

and Gu Jing's home. He smiled, he was worried the volcanic Gu Jing was going to charge into his office soon.

'Zhen... Doctor Zhen,' the young nurse called.

The young nurse couldn't believe her eyes. The stern Dr Zhen was smiling brightly and his stern eyes were warm.

Zhen Lang put on his glasses and he composed himself. He accepted the box of sweet pastries from the young nurse and put the box on his desk. He politely smiled. 'Thank you. I'll eat it later. I'll go see Mr Wang first.'

Zhen Lang walked passed the young nurse and he found Mr Wang waiting outside near his office. 'Mr Wang, how are you feeling?'

'Good. All thanks to a young national gem surgeon like you. Thanks to your surgical skills, my life was saved,' Mr Wang said.

'It was a standard surgery, the likelihood of it being unsuccessful was low,' Zhen Lang said humbly.

'Good, you're not arrogant or hot headed. You're a responsible and ethical man,' Mr Wang praised. He patted his granddaughter's hand. 'Shao Huang, this is Doctor Zhen. If it won't for him, I wouldn't be alive to go home with you.'

Wang Shao Huang stomped her foot in protest. 'Grandpa, don't speak nonsense. You're going to live to a ripe age pass one hundred years old.'

Mr Wang laughed a jolly laugh. 'Doctor Zhen don't mind my laughable granddaughter. She just came back from overseas so she's just sulking because she hasn't seen me for a long time.'

'I won't,' Zhen Lang said politely.

'Doctor Zhen, has my grandpa recovered from his surgery?' Wang Shao Huang asked.

Wang Shao Huang was a beautiful young girl. Her long hair and the sweet smile on her face was like a little lively doll. But Zhen Lang just glanced at her once and he focused on the medical file in his hand. 'Not bad. But he shouldn't overexert himself and take plenty of rest.'

Mr Wang nodded his head. Wang Shao Huang wanted to say something but a



disgruntled patient's loud voice interrupted their conversation.

'That bitch, I won't let that girl off the hook! Where's the doctor? Why isn't the doctor here? Is the doctor looking down on me because the doctor thinks I don't have money?' the man beaten by a Gu Jing said.

'Sorry, I need to attend to the new patient admitted to the hospital,' Zhen Lang said and he quickly walked toward the emergency ward.

The man laid on a stretcher and he waved his hand in the air to threaten the paramedics who wheeled him into the hospital. Zhen Lang pressed the man's hand down on the stretcher.

'Ow!' the man cried out.

The man assessed his captor, who looked like a stern young man with glasses. The man thought he couldn't beat the bitch but he could easily beat the young man in front of him. 'Bastard! What are you doing? Do you want a beating?'

'If your ribs are fractured, it could puncture your lungs and you won't live longer than half an hour. If it punctures your heart, you won't live longer than fifteen minutes,' Zhen Lang warned. He looked at his wristwatch. 'If you want to die, I'll help you record your time of death.'

'I, I...' the man stammered and he laid motionless on the stretcher.

Zhen Lang smiled charmingly. 'Also, I'm a doctor. If you want to chase me away then it means you're refusing treatment which is good for the hospital, because the hospital won't be responsible for delaying treatment. Remember to call your family and explain to them about your decision within the time you have left, it'll save them money suing the hospital.'

'I... what should I do now?' the man asked.

'From the sound of your voice, it appears you've fractured your ribs so you'll need to be examined thoroughly. Your fractured ribs can affect other vital organs and-'

'You, you... don't say anymore,' the man said. His whole body trembled. 'I want to have a complete health check, I'll follow your recommendation.'

'Then you'll need an x-ray, CT scan... um, I'll give your nurse a list. Also, you'll

need to have blood tests too,' Zhen Lang said.

'Why do I need to have a blood test?' the man asked.

'I'm worried you have internal haemorrhaging-' Zhen Lang said.

'Ok, take me wherever I need to go for testing,' the man said.

The young nurse who wore thick mascara helped wheeled the man for body scans.

'Nurse, is there a doctor here named Zhen Lang?' the man asked.

'Doctor Zhen? He's the doctor who helped examined you before,' the young nurse said.

'The doctor before... if the two of them combined, one person injuring a man and the other person saving the injured man... they'll be a pair of professional scammers! It's robbery in broad daylight!' the man protested.

One half of the alleged 'professional scammers' returned to his office. He looked outside his office window and he saw Gu Jing walked across the road and she jumped over the hospital's fence. She entered the hospital and he lost sight of her.

Zhen Lang heard a knock on his door and he quickly turned around, he was disappointed it was Wang Shao Huang.

'Doctor Zhen, my grandpa wants to invite you to a banquet to celebrate his recovery. He hopes you'll come,' Wang Shao Huang said.

Wang Shao Huang assessed Zhen Lang's bright smile and she assumed he wasn't immune to building a good connection with the Wang household. But Zhen Lang wasn't smiling at her... before she could ask him if he was accepting the banquet invite, the door slammed into her face.

'Hey!' Gu Jing cried out. She slammed her palms onto Zhen Lang's table. 'Are you coming over my place tonight or am I coming over your place?'

'There's more room at my place, come to my place tonight,' Zhen Lang said.

'Ok!' Gu Jing said. She turned around and she saw a young nurse blushed and a young girl rubbed their cheeks. Her eyes lit up mischievously. She blew Zhen Lang

a kiss. 'Tonight, remember to wash your bottom and wait for me.'

Wang Shao Huang and the young nurse were shocked and they both took a deep breath at the same time.

Zhen Lang's bright smile didn't change. 'Ok. Your husky voice today is very sexy. I can't wait to hear you scream tonight with your husky voice.'

Gu Jing walked passed Wang Shao Huang and the young nurse, and she heard them took another deep breath. She felt triumphant she spoiled Zhen Lang's plans with his beauties at the hospital, and all of her frustrations and anxiety built up through the day were melted.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Three

***Related***

# part 1

## Chapter Four (Part 1)

Gu Jing carried a bag of snacks and beers in her right hand and she swung a key ring around her left index finger. She hummed songs on the way to Zhen Lang's home.

Zhen Lang's home was inside an extravagant high-rise building, his home was a lot better than her cracked and on the verge of crumbling home. Zhen Lang's neighbourhood didn't have stray cats screech meow sounds in the middle of the night and there were no rowdy fish markets where people exchanged profanities like roosters crudely crowing at dogs. The smooth pebbled footpath to Zhen Lang's home was surrounded by aesthetic greenery, fresh air and ample sunlight.

Gu Jing purposely circled around the high-rise building to check if Zhen Lang's car was parked in the tenants' parking bay. She was happy she didn't see his car and she comfortably entered the high-rise building.

In the elevator Gu Jing was still mystified how twenty years ago Zhen Lang's dad's business took off like a kite elevated by the wind, which was why twenty years later Zhen Lang lived in a luxurious neighbourhood and Gu Jing lived in a poor neighbourhood.

But even if Gu Jing was beaten to death, she wouldn't admit Zhen Lang's dad enrolled her and Zhen Lang in the same primary school, high school and the most prestigious city college. Unfortunately when she and Zhen Lang came home to visit from the city, they complained to their parents they didn't like living in the crowded city and Zhen Lang's dad immediately bought an apartment in the high-rise building. Zhen Lang's dad said he bought the apartment for her and Zhen Lang to live together and take care of each other to give their parents a peace of mind.

The number above the glass elevator door quickly increased, Gu Jing exhaled deeply and she focused her attentions on the moon above the night sky outside the high-rise building.

Gu Jing had known Zhen Lang for many years, and between them they never

had a decent word to say about each other. Why did their parents think they could take care of each other? Weren't their parents scared they'd live together for less than three days, Zhen Lang's lungs would explode from annoyance and she would pound Zhen Lang's face until it was flat as a pancake?

Gu Jing and Zhen Lang's lives were intertwined for more than twenty years yet their parents didn't see the real nature of their relationship. Didn't their parents feel since they were adults and even if their parents didn't think they hated each other, an unrelated and unmarried male and female living together was a concern?

Gu Jing's carefree childhood years, her awkward adolescent years and her early spring young adult years flew by and cemented in her memories was an image of the same monster who shadowed her.

Gu Jing felt she only kissed Zhen Lang once and held him a little. So she didn't understand why it was necessary for Zhen Lang to shadow her until death.

Gu Jing hated Zhen Lang, looked down on him and resented him. Whenever she was in a bad mood, she just needed to think about Zhen Lang's face and she'd want to run to him and give him a beating to feel better. But she didn't dare vent on Zhen Lang in front of her parents and his parents.

Gu Jing would shudder and feel a cold sensation on her nape if she just thought about the past how her mum waved a pot and chased her passed ten homes of neighbouring families.

But what held back Gu Jing the most from killing Zhen Lang was his mum. Zhen Lang's mum was born with a hereditary heart condition and when Zhen Lang's mum gave birth to Zhen Lang she nearly lost her life. From the top to bottom members of the Zhen household, Zhen Lang's mum was under their protection as though Zhen Lang's mum was a national treasure. Even Zhen Lang's career path was chosen by the head of the Zhen household for Zhen Lang to help treat his mum's heart condition.

Gu Jing was mindful of Zhen Lang's mum's heart condition, she'd rather her mum beat her bottom until it ballooned like a red rose than dare to provoke Zhen Lang's mum.

Zhen Lang's mum's tears could flow like oceans. If Gu Jing or Zhen Lang made

his mum laugh, their lives were spared but if they evoked his mum's tears, they suffered. When they were younger her parents and his dad would join forces to punish them if they upset his mum, they were grounded for a month, their pocket money was deducted and all their recreational activities were cancelled.

Gu Jing and Zhen Lang's tragic childhood experiences meant even if they couldn't coexist under the same sky, they didn't dare to show it in front of her parents and his parents. Neither of them could tolerate each other's company and they wanted to be far away from each other. But neither of them wanted to earn the evil title of provoking his mum's weak heart so they were stuck together in an undesirable situation.

Gu Jing fiddled for the house key on her key chain, which she hadn't used for a long time. Then she looked at Zhen Lang's shiny door and she didn't hesitate to lift her leg and kick the shiny door. Afterward a shoe print marred the shiny door.

Gu Jing retrieved her leg and she walked through the door. Inside Zhen Lang's home everything was clean. She tossed her shoes and she walked barefoot into the kitchen. She opened the fridge and as she expected it was full of food and drinks, except her beloved beers and junk food.

Gu Jing sighed and unpacked her bag of beers and junk food into the fridge. She'd known Zhen Lang for many years so she knew his personality too well. He restricted himself, he was stern, he didn't touch junk food, he didn't drink, he didn't smoke, he slept early and woke up early, he didn't indulge in the slightest act of dishonesty and in her eyes living like him wasn't a meaningful life.

Gu Jing walked to her room. Inside her room she swept a finger on a table and she was satisfied there wasn't a speck of dust. She felt it was worth her insistence on paying half of his cleaner's fee to maintain her room in a clean condition to await her occasional visits.

Gu Jing opened drawers which stored her clothes then she picked up some of her neatly folded clothes and she flung it around her room to make her room look like it was lived in. She was satisfied about the new condition of her room, she grabbed a clean set of clothes and she walked to the bathroom to take a shower.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Four (Part 1)

***Related***

## part 2

### Chapter Four (Part 2 of 2)

Zhen Lang sat opposite his good friend at a quiet cafe and they chatted comfortably.

When Zhen Lang glanced at the clock on the cafe wall it was half past eight in the evening and he got a feeling the barrel of dynamite arrived at his home. He just hoped his house under her vandalising hands wouldn't turn into a horrific dump. An image of Gu Jing came into his mind, she would kick his front door open, barge into his house with dirty shoes on and walk straight to the bathroom. He smiled brightly and he wondered whether he should call a cleaner to tidy his house.

Lin Tu Shen looked at Zhen Lang who held a cup of coffee in his hand and Zhen Lang was smiling too brightly, Lin Tu Shen shivered and shook his head. 'What are you thinking about? If you keep smiling in front of me, it'll make people misunderstand.'

Zhen Lang put his cup of coffee onto the table. 'It's not the first day or the second day people have misunderstood us. Till this day we're still ranked first as the best pair of boy lovers in our old school. Do you want to recreate the same scene from that year?'

Lin Tu Shen gave Zhen Lang a no-way look. 'Is that alien a girl or not? She drank a lot that night but she was still capable of stripping you and me naked and tossing us onto the bed to take a photo. Even if I wanted to take revenge it'll be like chasing the wind, I can't win a fight against her.'

Zhen Lang laughed. 'I remember that year there was someone who declared he wanted to pursue her. He said he liked her free spirited attitude and she was better than a weak feminine girl. Her androgynous looks isn't easy to attract men, if taken home any man will have a peace of mind and she'll be the best life companion.'

Lin Tu Shen wiped sweat off his forehead. 'I want an independent girl but I don't want a girl who can rip me in half with her bare hands. I'll be emasculated



if I take her home and whenever she's unhappy she'll use me as a punching bag.'

Lin Tu Shen shook his head and he sighed. That year he felt Gu Jing was a special girl who wasn't like the other girls their age that only knew how to talk about makeup and shopping. But when he asked her to go out on a date with him, his pursuit sunk into the deep end.

Then Lin Tu Shen made a plan to change Gu Jing's heart, he dragged his good friend Zhen Lang to help execute his plan. Lin Tu Shen planned to personally hand Gu Jing a birthday cake on her birthday but... on the night of her birthday, she requested to have birthday drinks with him and Zhen Lang. Lin Tu Shen drank bowl after bowl of alcohol because he wanted to impress Gu Jing and the result of his plan was... the following morning when he and Zhen Lang woke up, they were both naked on a bed and they embraced each other. Gu Jing posted the photo of him and Zhen Lang in a compromising intimate position on their school's intranet and it instantly got one thousand views.

In the photo, Lin Tu Shen's tongue licked a creamy pink flower on Zhen Lang's chest. Yes, the creamy pink flower was the same one he asked a patissier to decorate on top of Gu Jing's birthday cake.

In a blink of an eye, Lin Tu Shen and Zhen Lang who were their school's famous heartthrobs became the school's best pair of boy lovers. Lin Tu Shen was humiliated to death, but Zhen Lang was neutral about it.

Then Lin Tu Shen was dizzy with anger and he confronted Gu Jing to ask her why she rejected and humiliated him. Unexpectedly, Gu Jing didn't open her mouth, she flipped him over her shoulder and he fell onto the ground and what she told him that day was etched deeply at the bottom of his heart – 'Who told you to be friends with Zhen Lang?'

Just because Lin Tu Shen was friends with Zhen Lang, Lin Tu Shen's first crush on a girl was put to death in an early grave... just because he was friends with Zhen Lang, his reputation was destroyed... just because he was friends with Zhen Lang he was turned into a joke... he was just friends with Zhen Lang, why couldn't she coexist under the same sky as Zhen Lang and why did she have such an angry outburst?

'Speaking about that year, your girlfriend broke up with you, didn't you have

any regrets?' Lin Tu Shen asked.

'Should I have any regrets?' Zhen Lang asked.

Lin Tu Shen was friends with Zhen Lang for eight years and he knew Zhen Lang didn't want to continue their conversation. But Lin Tu Shen was unhappy that he was the only one who was still bitter about that year. 'Perhaps for you not having a girlfriend isn't a regret or not having your reputation intact isn't a regret. But what about my reputation? Being associated with you as a pair of lovers has been tough for me.'

Lin Tu Shen's loudly spoken grievances earned him curious looks from the cafe's other customers and his back turned cold.

Lin Tu Shen lowered his voice and he glared at Zhen Lang. 'You could have cleared the misunderstanding back then or even not explain anything. But what was your reaction? You said um!'

'Um. Did you ask to see me today to talk about your grievances that year?' Zhen Lang asked.

Lin Tu Shen snapped out of his self-pity and he remembered the main reason why he wanted to see Zhen Lang. 'Our old professor opened a new plastic surgery clinic and he hopes when we're free we can help him. I came here to ask your opinion.'

'Plastic surgery?' Zhen Lang asked. He wrinkled his forehead and deliberated. 'I'm a cardiothoracic surgeon.'

'But you're also certified to as a plastic surgeon,' Lin Tu Shen reasoned and he wanted to provoke Zhen Lang more. 'The professor was the one who guided us, it's not right to refuse him.'

Zhen Lang laughed. 'Haven't you made a decision already? Then why still ask me about it? You could have just called me to let me know. You didn't need to see me in person.'

Lin Tu Shen was angry and he glared at Zhen Lang. 'It's been two months since we met up, just think of it as me missing you.'

The other customers gave Lin Tu Shen another curious look. He stood,

hunched over to hide his face and he ran off to escape the curious looks.

Later at Zhen Lang's home, Gu Jing used a towel to dry her hair and body. She heard a phone ringing from the living room, she quickly put on a robe and she ran outside to the living room. She dived face down onto the sofa, legs draped over a sofa arm and she reached for the phone.

When Zhen Lang walked through his front door, in front of him was a pair of long legs and a raised bottom. Gu Jing wore a loose robe and the landscape between the gap of her legs didn't leave anything to the imagination.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Four (Part 2 of 2)

***Related***

# Five

## Chapter Five

Gu Jing focused her attentions on her mum's explanation why her mum's visit was delayed, it gave Gu Jing a headache. Gu Jing was too suspicious that the phone was broken so she didn't notice Zhen Lang who stood at the door and he was staring mischievously at her.

'Hey, my little girl. Your dad strained his wrist, I'll come visit you in another two days,' Mrs Gu said.

'Is it serious? Does dad need to go to the hospital?' Gu Jing asked.

'It's nothing. Yesterday your dad was playing mahjong (a Chinese tile-based game, tiles similar size to dominoes) with a few people for too long and your dad strained his wrist,' Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing bit into a peach she grabbed from Zhen Lang's coffee table, and she choked – who strained their wrist from playing mahjong for too long... her dad. She coughed for a while before she threw up the peach flesh that choked her.

Gu Jing stood, she took a death breath but it didn't soothe her anger. 'If dad strained his wrist from playing mahjong for too long then why do you need to delay your visit for two days?'

'Because tomorrow it's your dad's turn to host mahjong at our home. I'm going to play in his place and he'll look on. This is a rare opportunity for me to play, how can I let the opportunity go?' Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing heard commotions from her mum's end, which suspiciously sounded like tile clanking sounds.

'Five thousand Yuan... ok, long distance calls are expensive... wait, my tiles-' Mrs Gu said and she hung up the phone.

Gu Jing glared at the phone and she wanted to cry but no tears came out.

Gu Jing was passed the age she could freely sulk to her mum for her mum to visit her, but she couldn't accept in her mum's eyes, she couldn't compete with a

game of mahjong – she accepted her mum found her from a rubbish bin. What sort of parents loved playing mahjong more than they loved their daughter who they haven't seen for half a year... unless they found their daughter from a rubbish bin.

Gu Jing stood in a beautiful pose and she tossed the peach accurately into the bin in front of her.

Gu Jing thought Zhen Lang lived a luxurious life, even the peaches he bought tasted more delicious than the peaches she bought. She scoffed and she grabbed another peach from his coffee table. Suddenly she noticed a tall shadow and she kicked in the direction of the owner's shadow. 'Who is it?'

Zhen Lang was used to Gu Jing's reflexes. He quickly took two steps back and he narrowly escaped the force of her kick.

After Gu Jing's foot brushed passed Zhen Lang's nose, she put down her guard. 'If you're home, why didn't you knock on the door?'

Gu Jing was relaxed, but Zhen Lang was on high alert. 'If I'm back at my own home, why do I need to knock?'

Gu Jing realised she wasn't at her home but she was at Zhen Lang's home. She scrunched her nose and she felt there was still a glimmer of hope she wouldn't lose the battle of words against Zhen Lang. 'Ah... then why were you standing behind me? Were you planning an ambush attack?'

Zhen Lang ignored the intimidating white foot in front of his face. He casually put his suitcase down then he glanced at Gu Jing's toes and he laughed mischievously. 'You dare to bruise my face and let me greet your mum with a bruised face?'

Gu Jing used her strength to take two deep breaths and she retrieved her angry foot. She sat on the sofa, she imagined the peach she held in her hand was Zhen Lang's flesh and she bit into the peach.

Zhen Lang smiled brightly for a while at the sight of Gu Jing forcing herself to focus on the TV, she was doing her best to restrain her desire to attack his face. Then he walked to the bathroom.

After Gu Jing heard the sound of water running from the bathroom, she rested

her back against the sofa and she thought about the consequences of her mum's phone call.

It was hard for Gu Jing to deal with her mum's two day delay, because before she left home she requested her landlord to fix pipes in her bathroom. So it was inconvenient for her to go home and come back and she couldn't shower in her home for at least two days.

Gu Jing didn't have a choice except to tolerate. At least she wouldn't see Zhen Lang's face in the morning and at night she and Zhen Lang would stay out of each other's way so two days would pass by quickly.

But Gu Jing didn't know why just the thought of living in the same place as Zhen Lang made her feel like a restless monkey, and she couldn't stand or sit peacefully to the point she wanted to hit her head and pull out her hair.

Recently when Gu Jing stopped a trio of thieves from stealing a young girl's money, she fought fearlessly against the trio who held knives. But when she was faced with Zhen Lang's smile, she was like a barrel of dynamite and she was ready to explode at the slightest provocation from him. It was a dangerous situation to put herself in! Especially when he squinted his eyes and he stared straight at her, it was like he was looking for her weak spots and he was ready to defend her attacks. It made her arms and legs itchier to attack him.

Gu Jing was determined, she wasn't used to retreating then she needed to bravely face her enemy. But her master taught her not to use strong force to against a weaker enemy. She sighed, she reminded herself Zhen Lang was an ordinary citizen and she needed to refrain from using force against him. If she couldn't attack him with her arms and legs then she'd attack him with her mouth.

Gu Jing spat out the peach seed from her mouth. She stretched her hand out onto the coffee table and she fumbled for another peach but it was mostly a cold empty plate, there was only one peach left.

Half the TV light was obstructed and it was dark in front of Gu Jing. She only saw Zhen Lang's tall body in front of her. He hunched over the coffee table and his target was the last peach on the plate.

The TV light reflected off Zhen Lang's handsome face and the water drops on

his hair looked like drops of crystals. The water drops from his head slowly dripped onto Gu Jing's hand.

The body wash scent on Zhen Lang's body was the same scent on Gu Jing's body and it made her uncomfortable pointlessly because they both just showered using the same body wash.

Zhen Lang wore a loose robe with a v-neck collar, his chiseled chest was visible under his robe collar and the way his chest moved in sync with his breathing was mesmerising.

The moment Gu Jing realised what she was thinking, she immediately retrieved her hand. Her fingers gripped protectively around the last peach and she laughed triumphantly.

Gu Jing scoffed, there was nothing about Zhen Lang she hadn't seen. His toy was just bigger than the past when he cried loudly just because she held it a bit. If he wanted to distract her, there wasn't even a gap through a door for her to be distracted by his half state of undress.

Zhen Lang didn't say anything and he sat on the sofa at the furthest distance from Gu Jing. He spoke in a soothing voice like gentle rainfall. 'You like this kind of fruit?'

Gu Jing stared a while at the empty plate as a result of her appetite. But she didn't want to admit the truth in front of the man who didn't like eating junk food and also the man who she imagined substituted the peach flesh whilst she chewed the peaches. She spoke stiffly. 'It didn't taste bad.'

Zhen Lang took off his glasses. His stern eyes clearly looked relaxed at night more than they did during the day. 'It's good you like it.'

Gu Jing felt since she defeated Zhen Lang to capture the last peach, she should at least be gracious a bit. 'Where did you buy it? Tomorrow I'll go buy it.'

Gu Jing rubbed the peach for a while and she was about to put it in her mouth when Zhen Lang gave an unexpected reply.

'It was a gift,' Zhen Lang said and he leaned his back against the sofa.

Gu Jing bounced the peach on her palm. 'Being a doctor is actually a good

thing, you get to receive gifts daily. You don't dare to accept red packets but accepting other kinds of gifts isn't bad.'

'It wasn't a gift given to me,' Zhen Lang said. He flipped through a book in his hand and he didn't lift his head. 'Recently there was a patient with lung cancer. The patient's visitors came to visit the patient with many gifts. But the patient had died before the visitors came. The patient's family couldn't carry all of the gifts home so they left some of it behind and I took the peaches home.'

Gu Jing's held the peach in mid-air in front of her mouth, her body tensed and she threw the peach in Zhen Lang's direction. 'How can you be such an opportunist? You don't discriminate even against a dead person's belongings and bring it home with you?'

Zhen Lang happily caught the peach and he bit loudly into the peach 'Ah, I remembered wrongly. It seems I bought this at the supermarkets yesterday.'

'You!' Gu Jing called. She shot up and stood on the sofa. Her foot like the wind swept passed Zhen Lang's face. 'You forgot on purpose.'

'Don't kick my face, your mum will see,' Zhen Lang said calmly.

Gu Jing's foot was two centimetres in front of Zhen Lang's nose before she retreated her foot. She gritted her teeth and she glared at his happy face. 'You did forget on purpose. Only monsters will believe you.'

Zhen Lang put the peach seed down onto the plate. The juice from the peach made his beautiful lips that were smiling shiny. 'Don't lower your self-worth. Compared to monsters, you're scarier. But at least monsters can distinguish a male monster from a female monster. Can you distinguish the difference between a male human from a female human?'

Zhen Lang swept his eyes from the top to the bottom of Gu Jing's body. 'From a distance the mountain looks like it's curved. At a close distance the mountain is flat.'

Gu Jing was speechless. Gu Jing fisted her hands tightly to the point the crack sounds from her knuckles were loud and clear.

Gu Jing reasoned her mum didn't arrive yet, she could hit Zhen Lang first and later she could hide from her mum.



The moment Gu Jing was about to explode and attack Zhen Lang, he stood abruptly. 'I forgot to confirm, the two underwear in the bathroom belong to you, right? Go tidy the bathroom.'

Gu Jing was still hot headed but she replied honestly. 'I just received a call, I forgot to...'

Gu Jing felt there was something wrong... what did Zhen Lang say? Two underwear? One dirty underwear, one clean underwear... one plus one was two so two underwear was correct... wrong!

A cool wind swept through the opened window, and passed through Gu Jing's loose robe and through the middle of her legs... she felt a cold sensation. She lowered her head and she looked down through her robe. When she lifted her head, Zhen Lang wasn't within her reach, he was walking toward his room.

The moment Zhen Lang closed his bedroom door, Gu Jing cried out angrily in the living room. 'Zhen Lang, I want to turn you into mincemeat! You sly dog!'

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Five

***Related***

# Six

## Chapter Six

In the morning at the hospital a group of nurses speculated about why Dr Lang was in a happy mood.

‘Sisters tell me, do you think it has anything to do with the pretty boy from yesterday?’ a nurse asked.

‘Perhaps. Didn’t you hear Doctor Lang and the pretty boy made plans yesterday? I think Doctor Lang definitely scored last night and that’s why this morning he looks deliriously happy,’ another nurse said.

‘No wonder Doctor Lang ignores the female staff,’ a nurse said and she cried hysterically.

‘The world isn’t the same as it was in the past. Not only do females need to compete with other females for the man of their dreams, but they need to compete with other males too,’ a disgruntled nurse said.

‘But I think Doctor Lang and the pretty boy make a beautiful couple,’ a brave nurse said and she quickly escaped the shower of daggers from her co-workers.

In the afternoon Zhen Lang sat in his office at the hospital, he twirled the pen in his hand and he thought about Gu Jing. He felt Gu Jing purposely avoided him in the morning, because she was still angry at him about what happened last night.

Zhen Lang put the pen down, took off his glasses, rubbed his eyes and he smiled. He felt it was a good feeling to bicker with Gu Jing.

Zhen Lang heard a knock on the door, he quickly put on his glasses and he stopped smiling.

Wang Shao Huang entered Zhen Lang’s office. She wore a tight black mini dress and her wavy hair was braided to one side. Her heels clicked as she walked to a guest chair in front of Zhen Lang’s desk. ‘I wanted to continue our conversation that was cut short yesterday. I hope I’m not bothering you during your lunch time.’

Zhen Lang looked at his wrist watch and he thought Gu Jing would be at the cafe with Peng Cheng Gui. 'Miss Wang, if you don't mind can we chat and eat lunch at the cafe opposite the hospital?'

Wang Shao Huang smiled seductively and she nodded her head.

At the cafe a waiter took Zhen Lang and Wang Shao Huang's orders. Wang Shao Huang glanced at the menu of sweet desserts and she immediately closed it. 'I'll just have a glass of water with ice.'

Zhen Lang scanned the cafe and he saw Gu Jing sat with Peng Cheng Gui at a distance from him. 'Can you come back later? I'm still indecisive.'

The waiter nodded his head and he took Wang Shao Huang's menu back to the counter.

'Do you want to discuss about Mr Wang's banquet?' Zhen Lang asked.

Wang Shao Huang nodded her head and she laughed daintily. 'It's a banquet but it's more of a small family gathering. Since tomorrow's a weekend, Doctor Lang are you free to attend?'

Zhen Lang didn't get a chance to reply, Wang Shao Huang pleaded her case. 'My granddad especially chose tomorrow for the banquet, because he hopes you can attend. He told I have to convince you to come.'

'Often when I'm off duty the hospital calls me to come in for emergency surgeries. So even when I'm off duty I don't drink alcohol, which is why-' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang didn't finish declining Mr Wang's banquet invite when Gu Jing in a flash appeared and she draped an arm around Zhen Lang's shoulder. 'Lang Lang, if you're here, why didn't you call me to have lunch with you?'

On the outside Gu Jing was smiling lovingly with Zhen Lang. But Zhen Lang saw the fiery daggers in her round eyes and he understood she was still angry about last night.

Zhen Lang's eyes flamed the angry fire in Gu Jing's eyes. 'Jing Jing, you knew I was here.'

Wang Shao Huang sat opposite Zhen Lang and Gu Jing. Although Zhen Lang

and Gu Jing could read each other's gazes, to a bystander like Wang Shao Huang it looked like Zhen Lang and Gu Lang were gazing lovingly into each other's eyes.

Gu Jing gritted her teeth and she forced herself to smile sweetly to the point honey almost flowed out of her eyes. 'My love, how can I not know where you are? It's called a lover's telepathic connection.'

Of course Gu Jing knew when Zhen Lang arrived at the cafe, because she spent the whole morning in the cafe cursing Zhen Lang!

Half an hour earlier...

Peng Cheng Gui watched her friend Gu Jing banged her forehead against the cafe's table. Peng Cheng Gui didn't know if she pitied the table or Gu Jing's forehead.

'Zhen Lang saw everything?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing lifted her head and her face burned with anger. 'No! He said there were two underwear in the bathroom, but it was just a diversion tactic for him to escape. I went back to the bathroom and checked properly if I was wearing underwear, I did wear underwear! It just slipped down my thighs when I was kicking.'

'Then why are you angry? Don't tell me you're angry because he didn't see everything,' Peng Cheng Gui said and she munched on a fried potato chip.

'You...' Gu Jing said. She shoved fried potato chips into her mouth to calm herself down. 'I'm angry because I can't believe I was so gullible. He's lucky he ran away fast last night or I would have skinned him and used his bones to make soup.'

Peng Cheng Gui burst into laughter. 'What soup would you make?'

'Don't underestimate me or I'll...' Gu Jing said and she fisted her hands because she saw Zhen Lang entered the cafe.

Peng Cheng Gui turned around and she saw Zhen Lang at the door. 'Is that Zhen Lang? Is the pretty girl his girlfriend?'

Five minutes later...

'That's right, my love,' Zhen Lang said. He wrapped an arm around Gu Jing's

waist and he pulled her onto his lap. He leaned close to her ear and he spoke in a husky voice. 'My love, what do you want to eat?'

Gu Jing shivered and she wanted to throw up her fried potato chips.

Wang Shao Huang was stunned. The pretty boy on Zhen Lang's lap was the same pretty boy who made plans with Zhen Lang yesterday.

Gu Jing's free hand picked up the menu on the table. Her other hand was on Zhen Lang's thigh, it was busy clawing his thigh. 'Lang Lang are you treating me lunch today?'

'Of course, my love,' Zhen Lang said. He pulled Gu Jing closer to his chest and he helped her opened the menu. 'Last night you made me very happy. Today I need to feed you until you're full.'

Gu Jing gritted her teeth because Zhen Lang's fingers dug into her waist. She didn't bother to look at the menu and she blindly pointed at a dish on the menu. 'What about this one?'

'If it makes you happy, it's ok. Order another dish,' Zhen Lang said and he gripped Gu Jing's waist tighter.

Gu Jing rotated her fingernails on Zhen Lang's thigh. 'Ok, what about his one?'

Zhen Lang shifted his legs from right to left several times. 'That one tastes good. Do want to try other dishes too?'

Gu Jing's fingernails dug into Zhen Lang's other thigh. 'What does this one taste like?'

Zhen Lang wrapped his arm around Gu Jing's other waist and his fingers pinched her waist. 'Tastes good. What do you think?'

The waiter's forehead was sweaty, he wrote down a list of dishes the handsome pair of male lovers ordered and he couldn't believe they wanted to add more to their order.

'What about the banquet?' Wang Shao Huang interrupted.

Gu Jing let go of Zhen Lang's thigh and she looked at Wang Shao Huang. 'Will there be alcohol?'

Zhen Lang loosened his grip on Gu Jing's waist and he laughed. 'That's right. Mr Wang is hosting a banquet tomorrow and they'll be serving high quality vintage wine. My love, do you want to come with me tomorrow to taste some wine?'

Gu Jing's selective ears only heard 'wine, tomorrow wine.'

Zhen Lang turned to face Wang Shao Huang and he smiled politely. 'Tomorrow, Jing Jing and I will be attending Mr Wang's banquet.'

'Tomorrow? Why do I have to go with you-' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing didn't finish her objection, because a group of waiters brought several plates of food onto the table. 'Gentlemen, here is your order.'

Gu Jing saw a sea of colours, soft buttery and fruity dishes. 'What is this?'

The waiter recited the handsome pair of male lovers' order. 'Gateau cake, profiteroles, macaron tower, floating island, fruit tart, creme brulee and chocolate croissant.'

Gu Jing's head spun. Zhen Lang picked up a fruit tart and he fed Gu Jing. 'My love, you ordered these desserts. I remember you love these desserts to death.'

Gu Jing opened her mouth and she definitely loved each sweet bite to death, because she was angry to death she couldn't throw up the vile creamy buttery and sugary sweetness.

Gu Jing smiled sweetly but on the inside she cursed Zhen Lang, since the dessert fiasco she cut sugar out of her diet. But Zhen Lang purposely ordered desserts!

Gu Jing used all her strength to rip Zhen Lang's shirt. Two buttons flung off Zhen Lang's shirt and she forcefully lowered her head.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Six

***Related***

# Seven

## Chapter Seven

‘Wow! Did you find money on a footpath today? Usually you don’t even buy me toast. Why did you take away so many desserts for me?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

‘Zhen Lang bought it for me,’ Gu Jing said.

Peng Chen Gui choked on a macaron. ‘Zhen Lang? Does he have a death wish?’ She shook her head. ‘Mmm... that isn’t Zhen Lang’s style. If he bought it for you, he’ll want to personally witness you eat all the desserts. He wouldn’t let you take away desserts he bought for you to give it to me.’

Gu Jing sat on the sofa and she laughed uncontrollably. ‘Because I threw up the fruit tart he fed me onto him. While he washed up in the bathroom, I packed up the desserts and ran to the studio.’

‘You’re evil,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

‘Can you blame me? That year if it wasn’t for him, would I have ate cake icing and be hospitalised for a week? Have you ever had white diarrhea for a week that stunk like expired milk?’ Gu Jing said asked.

Peng Cheng Gui lost her appetite for eating desserts and she glared at Gu Jing.

Gu Jing rubbed her stomach. ‘Throwing up the fruit tart, now my stomach is hungry. I’m going to order fried rice.’

Gu Jing reminisced about her childhood whilst she waited for her fried rice. When she was twelve years old she was on the rise to be a young Taekwondo national champion. A week before her trial to be on the national Taekwondo team, it was her twelfth birthday. Her mum ordered a customised ten tier birthday cake. Zhen Lang commented he liked the pink flowers on top of her birthday cake. When no one was paying attention to her, she licked off the pink flower icing on top of her birthday cake and as a result she was hospitalised for a week and she missed out on the chance to represent her country as a Taekwondo athlete at the Olympics.

The second time Gu Jing wanted to try out for the national team, Zhen Lang dissuaded her parents. 'Gu Jing will receive many injuries. She'll be forced to take supplements, which will affect her body. What happens if in the future her body is neither male nor female? Then no one will want to marry her.'

Gu Jing's parents banned her from trying out for the national team because they believed Zhen Lang's fear tactic.

Since then Gu Jing vowed her source of happiness was ruining Zhen Lang's happiness and defaming him was an achievement.

In Gu Jing's final year of high school she took the exams to become a photographer at a prestigious city college. She was happy she passed the exams. Her happiness was brief because Zhen Lang got accepted as an undergraduate medical student at the same college.

Gu Jing's fried rice arrived and she refuelled her empty stomach.

'Gu Jing, I don't think it was Zhen Lang's fault. You were the one who ate excessive cake icing and ended up in hospital,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing sighed because Peng Cheng Gui didn't understand Zhen Lang's nature the way Gu Jing did.

The following day Zhen Lang escorted Gu Jing to Mr Wang's banquet. Gu Jing wore a shirt and pants. Although she was always mistaken as a young boy because of her tall and slim frame in a shirt and pants, she didn't like wearing dresses and she didn't feel comfortable wearing heels.

Zhen Lang was dragged by Wang Shao Huang to socialise with Mr Wang's acquaintances.

Gu Jing didn't mind because she preoccupied herself with the platters of delicious gourmet food, vintage wine and exotic cocktails.

Mr Wang was the head of the Wang household and who was also rich and influential. That was why Gu Jing was happy to mingle with Mr Wang's female guests who were also rich and they requested Gu Jing to take professional photos of them at her studio. She gave them her business cards and instructed them to drop by the studio tomorrow because Peng Cheng Gui was available to help them with appointment bookings and price inquiries.



Immediately after Gu Jing gave out all her business cards she brought to the banquet, she hid in the bathroom and she called Peng Cheng Gui. 'Tomorrow rich ladies are dropping by the studio. Remember to recommend the most expensive photo packages.'

'Gu Jing, I've made an executive decision. Starting from tomorrow all photo package pricings from three years ago will be raised by fifty percent,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing laughed excitedly. 'Peng Cheng Gui, when it comes to business we think alike.'

Later that night Gu Jing learnt eating and drinking free fancy food and drinks wasn't always a good thing...

Zhen Lang drove Gu Jing back to his home and they both went to their own bedroom.

In the middle of the night Zhen Lang woke up because he heard running water in the bathroom.

Zhen Lang heard correctly. Gu Jing's whole body was itchy, it kept her awake and finally she couldn't stand the itchiness and she took a shower.

Gu Jing showered and wore clean clothes but her body was still itchy. She kicked opened Zhen Lang's bedroom door. 'Mr Vet, do you have medication? My body's itchy.'

Zhen Lang waved his hand. 'Come here and I'll take a look.'

Gu Jing's body was itchier than her desire to oppose Zhen Lang. She crawled onto his bed, rolled up her shirt sleeves and she unbuttoned enough buttons to show him her neck.

Zhen Lang saw a few small pink spots on Gu Jing's neck and arms. He touched a small pink spot on her arm and it didn't enlarge the small pink spot. 'Gu Jing, what did you eat?'

Gu Jing scratched her arms and more small pink spots appeared on her arms. 'I don't know. I ate and drank everything at Mr Wang's banquet.'

'Perhaps you had an allergic reaction to something in a cocktail or an allergic

reaction from one of the seafood,' Zhen Lang said. He grabbed his phone from the bedside table. 'Wait for me to make a call then I'll take you to the hospital to find out the cause of your allergic reaction.'

'Mr Vet, do you have any medication I can take? I'm itchy to death,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang opened a drawer and he took out a tube of lotion. 'This will relieve the itchiness, but use it sparingly.'

'Um,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing ran to the bathroom and Zhen Lang's advice was like wind passing through her ears. She rubbed a thick layer of it over her body whilst Zhen Lang called the hospital to explain about her symptoms.

Gu Jing returned to Zhen Lang's room. 'Mr Vet, I can't rub it on my back. Help me.'

Zhen Lang rubbed a thin layer of the lotion on Gu Jing's back and she exhaled loudly.

Zhen Lang and Gu Jing didn't pay attention to the sounds of someone who was attempting to open the front door.

'Hey, I want more,' Gu Jing said.

'No, too much isn't good for your body,' Zhen Lang said.

'I don't care. If you're not going to give it to me then I'll take it myself,' Gu Jing said.

'Can you not be this aggressive?' Zhen Lang asked.

'I'm always this aggressive. Are you going to give it to me or not?' Gu Jing said.

Mrs Gu dropped her suitcase and she ran into Zhen Lang's room. She saw her daughter in bed with Zhen Lang and her daughter was sitting on top of Zhen Lang. Her daughter pulled Zhen Lang's shirt collar and her daughter's clothes were wrinkled, throat had small pink spots and fingernail scratches. Zhen Lang laid on the bed and he struggled to get out of her daughter's grip.

Mrs Gu smacked her daughter's head and Mrs Gu spoke loudly. 'You rotten

girl! You dare force yourself on Zhen Lang!’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Seven

***Related***

# Eight

## Chapter Eight

Acquaintances of the Gu household knew who was the dominant Gu household member, it wasn't Mr Gu or the Taekwondo expert Gu Jing but it was the ferocious Mrs Gu.

It was rumoured Mrs Gu came from a family of mountain hunters. When Mrs Gu was a young girl, she caught snakes and fought wolves with her bare hands. Of course Mrs Gu also used her physical strength for good too, she loved to fight for justice.

At Zhen Lang's home, Mrs Gu's sense of justice didn't waver. She stood on Zhen Lang's side against her daughter who abused Taekwondo to force Zhen Lang in bed. 'You little scoundrel! Your mum is going to beat you to death.'

Mrs Gu hit her daughter hard enough for her daughter to fall onto Zhen Lang's chest. Her daughter didn't wait for her next attack, her daughter jumped off the bed and lied at the same time. 'I didn't force myself onto Zhen Lang.'

Gu Jing ran outside and her mum chased after her. She hid behind the sofa and her mum took something out of a suitcase. 'I saw it with my own eyes. Stand right there for your mum to beat you to death!'

'Mum, if you don't hit me then I'll stand still,' Gu Jing said and she jumped over the sofa.

Mrs Gu held a marinated chicken in her hand and she glared at her daughter. 'If you stand still, your mum won't hit you.'

'I don't believe you,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing was about to open the front door to escape when Zhen Lang came out of the kitchen. 'Gu Jing, you're not wearing underwear.'

'I am wearing underwear!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing jumped to avoid her mum's attack but her head was hit by a chicken. 'Ah! Mum, there's nothing between me and Zhen Lang.' She ducked and she

pointed at the traitor Zhen Lang. 'Mum, if you don't believe me, you can ask Zhen Lang.'

Zhen Lang was drinking a cup of coffee, his eyes lit up and he nodded his head.

'What are you doing nodding your head? Hurry up and explain clearly to my mum!' Gu Jing said and she ran to avoid the chicken.

'You dare threaten Zhen Lang?' Mrs Gu asked.

Zhen Lang drank his coffee and he enjoyed watching Gu Jing chased by aunty Gu and a marinated chicken. 'Aunty Gu, Gu Jing had an allergic reaction. I'm taking her to the hospital. I'll leave the house in your capable hands.'

'What?' Mrs Gu asked. She lowered the chicken. 'My healthy daughter is sick? Oh, I've got to call the other side to let them know.'

Zhen Lang and Gu Jing both knew who 'the other side' were, his parents and her dad.

'It's a mild allergic reaction. Later Gu Jing just needs to avoid whatever made her itchy,' Zhen Lang said.

Mrs Gu patted Zhen Lang's shoulder. 'You've suffered.'

'Aunty, of course I need to take care of Gu Jing,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing changed clothes like the wind, she grabbed Zhen Lang's shirt sleeve and she pulled him outside to his car.

On the way to the hospital Gu Jing grilled Zhen Lang. 'Why didn't you explain properly to my mum?'

Zhen Lang kept his hands on the steering wheel and his eyes on the road. 'Do you think aunty needs an explanation? If I was the one who forced myself on you, aunty would have chased me with her chicken. Aunty wants to exercise her love for her daughter she hasn't seen for a long time. You just need to let aunty release her love and it'll be ok.'

Gu Jing rubbed her stomach. 'Exercising too early in the morning with mum made me hungry.'

'After you're properly examined then you can eat. You need to be careful you

don't eat something that will make you itchier,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing loved to eat, she wasn't too fussy about food and her fast metabolism made her deflate like a balloon if she didn't eat enough.

Gu Jing itched her skin again. 'Can you not remind me? I wasn't itchy in the car until you mentioned it.'

'If your examination is done within an hour, you can eat at the restaurant opposite the hospital. Any later and the restaurant will be closed until lunch,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang parked the car in front of the hospital and Gu Jing jumped out of the car. 'Hurry up, come out so I can be examined quickly and we can eat.'

Zhen Lang smiled and he stayed in the car. 'I've waited twenty years to see you naturally sick. I'll go buy breakfast for you to commemorate this momentous occasion.'

Gu Jing looked suspiciously at Zhen Lang.

'Aunt's here. Besides, bullying a sick person isn't fun,' Zhen Lang said and he drove off.

Gu Jing believed Zhen Lang because one of their parents were in the city, she walked into the hospital reassured she'd be fed breakfast and she wouldn't be ambushed.

After Gu Jing was examined she walked to Zhen Lang's office to eat the breakfast meal he promised he'd buy for her.

Although Zhen Lang wasn't inside his office, Gu Jing's eyes lit up one hundred watts because on the table were two take away meals from the best restaurant in the city. The restaurant wasn't far from the studio, but it was popular and every morning there was a long queue. She didn't need to line up and still got to eat a free delicious meal.

Gu Jing sat on Zhen Lang's chair and she opened the two containers. One was congee and the other one was pork stew. She picked up the spoon and ate the pork stew, it tasted delicious as its fragrant smell.

Gu Jing leaned back in Zhen Lang's chair and she rubbed her half full stomach.

She saw Zhen Lang walked into his office and he held her results. 'What was I allergic to?'

'You ate too many seafood, drank too many fruity and nutty cocktails and... you ate too many peaches. If you ate and drank moderately, nothing would have happened. But the combination made it hard for your body to break down the protein, your IgE tagged it as harmful protein and your white blood cells attacked the tagged protein, which triggered your allergic reaction,' Zhen Lang said.

'Then what should I do?' Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing felt her throat was itchier and her face started swelling.

'Eat less, drink less...' Zhen Lang said and he paused to look at the empty container. 'Avoid eating seafood... did you eat the pork stew?'

Gu Jing wiped her mouth with a tissue. 'Um, it was delicious but the portions were small.'

Zhen Lang looked up at the ceiling and he laughed helplessly.

'Why are you laughing?' Gu Jing asked.

'It's nothing, except the pork stew you ate contained crab stock,' Zhen Lang said.

'So what? Crab meat isn't toxic... seafood?' Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang couldn't sit in his occupied chair so he sat on a spare chair and ate the congee. 'The cafe only use fresh and real ingredients. If they said they used crab stock, they're not lying, they'd use real crab meat to make crab stock.'

The following three days Gu Jing stayed home with a swollen pig face. If she was awake, there would only be one small bowl of plain rice congee to fill her stomach.

Gu Jing learnt she couldn't accept kindness from an enemy, especially pork stew from an enemy because it gave her an allergic reaction.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Eight

***Related***



# part 1

## Chapter Nine (Part 1)

Gu Jing's swollen pig face was bandaged so she wouldn't scratch her face. She didn't mind staying home, except her mum watched her vigilantly. It meant she couldn't drink alcohol, eat spicy food, eat meat or eat seafood for three days. She begged for a little red meat or even a little chicken, but her mum didn't cave in front of her teary red eyes.

Gu Jing saw an opportunity to smuggle braised pork and eggs into her deflated stomach when her mum was busy tidying the kitchen.

Gu Jing's dry fingers grabbed a piece of braised pork meat set on the dining table, but she felt chopsticks appeared out of thin air and it clasped her dry fingers together.

'Ah! Zhen-Lang! Let go of my fingers!' Gu Jing cried out.

'Ok,' Zhen Lang said. He released Gu Jing's fingers from his chopsticks. 'Aunty, Gu Jing's eating behind your back.'

Gu Jing didn't understand why she heard Zhen Lang's voice for more than twenty years, yet his voice never ceased to make her arms and feet itchy.

'Does it have to be this way? It's only one piece of braised pork meat,' Gu Jing said. She retrieved her fingers and shoved the meat in her mouth. 'We're adults now. Do you have to be this childish?'

'Ah!' Gu Jing cried out and she spat out the meat that burnt her tongue.

Mrs Gu poked her head through the dining room door and she looked suspiciously at her daughter. 'Did you eat meat behind my back?'

Gu Jing covered her mouth and she shook her head.

Zhen Lang smiled and he put his glass of water and ice in front of Gu Jing.

Gu Jing didn't care if her enemy's food and drinks gave her an allergic reaction or not, she picked up Zhen Lang's glass of water and she drank it to cool her burnt tongue. 'No mum, no one's eating meat behind your back.'

Gu Jing rested her chin on the dining table and she stared lovingly at the meat and seafood dishes. She swallowed her saliva, it was her misfortune her enemy watched her vigilantly as her mum.

The unsympathetic Mrs Gu put a bowl of plain white rice congee in front of her daughter. 'This is yours.'

Gu Jing looked at her bowl of congee, there was no meat, no seafood and not even onions. She looked back at the meat and seafood dishes on the dining table like a dog who begged for leftover meat.

'Mum, can I at least have pickled cucumber?' Gu Jing asked her mum who she suspected found her in a rubbish bin.

'Get it yourself,' Mrs Gu said. She carefully scooped a bowl of soup and she put it in front of Zhen Lang. 'Lang Lang, eat this nutritious bowl of soup. It took aunty one day and one night to make the soup broth.'

Gu Jing sniffed the delicious scent of the soup and she smiled sweetly. 'Mum, what soup did you make for Zhen Lang?'

'The soup is increase Lang Lang's stamina,' Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing laughed and she spat out the mouthful of congee.

Mrs Gu's hands shielded Zhen Lang's bowl of soup. 'Don't contaminate Lang Lang's soup.'

'Aunty, it's ok,' Zhen Lang said. He looked at Gu Jing and he smiled. 'My stamina is in good condition.'

'Of course you need to increase your stamina. My daughter is hard to serve. I'll make more nutritious meals to increase your stamina before I leave,' Mrs Gu said.

'Yes, aunty,' Zhen Lang said and he stirred the bowl of soup with his spoon.

Gu Jing covered her mouth to calm her laughter. 'Zhen Lang, my mum spent a whole day and night to make your bowl of soup. Don't make my mum sad, make sure you eat your bowl of soup and then eat another serving of soup.'

Zhen Lang forced himself to swallow a mouthful of the soup and he nearly spat it out when he heard Gu Jing wanted him to have a second serving of soup. He

lifted his head and smiled at Gu Jing. 'Gu Jing, you want me to eat a second serving of soup?'

'Of course,' Gu Jing said. She nodded her head and she happily ate her plain white rice congee, which tasted delicious after she knew what soup Zhen Lang was eating. 'I hope your stamina is increased a lot. The more nutritious food you eat the healthier you are.'

Of course Gu Jing hoped Zhen Lang's stamina increased, she wanted his stamina to increase to the point the blood pressure clotted his brain and his body would explode.

Gu Jing was too busy gulping down her congee that she didn't notice her mum looked suspiciously back and forth between her and Zhen Lang.

Zhen Lang's phone rang, there was an emergency, he stood and he put on his jacket. 'Aunty, the hospital called to ask me to do an emergency surgery.'

'Lang Lang go ahead, work is more important,' Mrs Gu said.

Zhen Lang rushed to the front door. 'Aunty, the next few days I'll be home late. You don't have to make dinner for me.'

Mrs Gu nodded her head. She waved bye to Zhen Lang. Suddenly Mrs Gu and Zhen Lang simultaneously looked at Gu Jing who was eyeing Zhen Lang's barely touched bowl of soup, Mrs Gu and Zhen Lang exchanged a secret smile.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Nine (Part 1)

***Related***

## part 2

### Chapter Nine (Part 2 of 2)

The moment Zhen Lang left, Mrs Gu initiated the first step of her plan for her daughter's future. 'Being a doctor is demanding, it's hard for Zhen Lang to even finish a meal without interruption. He only ate two mouthfuls of soup, how is going to have enough energy for the rest of the day?'

Gu Jing's eyes carefully assessed Zhen Lang's abandoned bowl of soup. What two mouthfuls? He barely ate one mouthful of soup. 'Mum, are you certain the hospital called him? Don't you think it's more like you scared him away with your nutritious bowl of soup?'

Mrs Gu knocked her daughter's head. 'Zhen Lang isn't like you, he was good since he was a child.'

Gu Jing rubbed her sore head, she regretted she wasn't more careful of her mouth. In her parents' hearts and Zhen Lang's parents' hearts, Zhen Lang was always the epitome of goodness. That was why Zhen Lang showed his real evil self in front of her, he wasn't scared she would reveal his secret because no one would believe her.

Gu Jing lost her appetite and she walked back to her jail cell.

Later in the evening Gu Jing's stomach rumbled and she distracted her hunger with TV. The TV inconsiderably advertised instant noodles, savory biscuits and frozen tropical fruits. The more she watched the louder her stomach rumbled.

Gu Jing closed her eyes, but roasted ducks and grilled minced pork patties circled her head. She buried her bandaged face into her pillow. She regretted she couldn't cook and she didn't dare to go outside to buy food with her bandaged face. She looked at the clock on the wall and her eyes lit up, her mum always slept early and the fridge was guard free!

Gu Jing crawled outside to the dark kitchen and she bumped into something. 'Ah!'

Gu Jing's hands touched the object in front of her, it wasn't too hard or too

soft. It was smooth, firm and she felt clear creases. She scratched and rubbed the object in front of her and her hands slowly moved down.

‘If your hands move any lower, I’ll tell aunty you tried to seduce me in the middle of the night,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing retrieved her hands like nothing happened, she stood and she turned on the kitchen light.

Gu Jing saw the object she touched in the dark, it was Zhen Lang’s chest. He stood in the kitchen in a loose robe.

Gu Jing’s eyes looked at Zhen Lang’s opened robe, if her hands moved down another two centimetres it would have moved down passed his stomach. ‘In the future don’t walk around the house half naked, make sure you wear proper clothes.’

Gu Jing sat at the dining table and her mouth drooled at the sight of a bowl of congee with minced pork, eggs and onions. She picked up a spoon and she looked at Zhen Lang. ‘If you don’t want to die, don’t tell my mum.’

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing’s hand that held the spoon. His hand was a little cold and wet like he just showered. But she only cared that he didn’t refuse her request, she put the spoon down and pulled her hand out of his hands.

Gu Jing ran to the fridge – her beer, her junk food... all gone. She checked each section of the fridge, nothing but vegetables and raw meat. She ran back to the dining room. ‘Hey, have you see the food I bought in the fridge.’

Zhen Lang swallowed the last mouthful of congee. He stood, walked passed Gu Jing and he washed the empty bowl and spoon in the kitchen. Then he walked passed her to his bedroom.

Gu Jing followed Zhen Lang to his bedroom, but he closed his bedroom door and it nearly hit her nose.

Gu Jing pressed her ear against the closed Zhen Lang’s bedroom door to check if he was changing his clothes.

‘I threw it out,’ Zhen Lang said from inside his bedroom.

Gu Jing thought she misheard Zhen Lang. Did he say he threw it out? Her beer

and her junk food? Then what was she supposed to eat and drink?

Gu Jing wanted to kick down Zhen Lang's bedroom door, but she was scared it would wake up her mum. She rubbed her tragic stomach and she returned to the kitchen. She opened the fridge and looked for food she could eat raw, there was the lettuce which she knew if she washed it she could eat it raw... but she didn't know if the water spinach could be eaten raw. Her stomach was right to rumble, she wasn't a rabbit, why did she need to eat raw vegetables?

Gu Jing looked at the kitchen bench and she saw Zhen Lang forgot to wash the pot of congee. She lunged at the pot, she lifted the lid and she was overjoyed there was enough congee with minced pork, eggs and onions left to fill half a bowl.

Gu Jing picked up a spoon and she happily ate the leftover congee. She laughed at the foolish Zhen Lang, he threw away her beer and junk food but he still couldn't starve her to death. Her thoughts cheered her up and she felt the leftover congee tasted delicious.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Nine (Part 2 of 2)

***Related***

# Ten

## Chapter Ten

‘Gu Jing, there’s really nothing going on between you and Zhen Lang?’ Mrs Gu asked.

Gu Jing rubbed her sore bottom, her mum caught her eating the roast chicken leg. ‘Um.’

‘Nothing?’ Mrs Gu asked.

Gu Jing sat at the dining table and she stared at the forbidden roast chicken thigh. ‘Um.’

Gu Jing’s hand bravely reached for the chicken leg and her mum hit her brave hand. ‘Zhen Lang won’t eat the chicken leg, why do you need to save it for him?’

‘You only know how to eat chicken leg! Zhen Lang’s a good man, why don’t you know how to eat Zhen Lang?’ Mrs Gu asked.

‘Eat Zhen Lang? His whole body is just bones, there’s no meat. What’s good about him to eat?’ Gu Jing said.

Mrs Gu hit her daughter’s head with a spoon. ‘When you were a child you didn’t need to hold onto Zhen Lang, but you held onto him. Now you’re an adult you need to hold onto him, but you won’t.’

Gu Jing’s brave hand was rewarded, it successfully grabbed a chicken leg. She chewed the chicken leg like it was Zhen Lang’s leg, it calmed her down after she heard her mum’s hard to swallow advice.

‘Ah!’ Gu Jing cried out. Her mum knocked the chicken leg out of her hand. ‘Mum, what are you saying? You want me to pursue Zhen Lang?’

‘Your older cousin needs to go to work, she asked me to babysit Dou Dou. I need to go back home in two days. You rotten girl, you’re twenty-five years old. If you don’t hurry up and find a man to marry you, you’ll become an old maid,’ Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing picked up the newspaper and she folded a paper aeroplane. She

reminisced too deeply about the past and she didn't hear what her mum said. 'Um.'

Suddenly Gu Jing heard her mum stopped talking, she looked up and she saw her mum was looking at her suspiciously. 'Mum, your chest is flat. How did you entice dad?'

Mrs Gu knocked her daughter's head. 'Do you want to die?'

Gu Jing looked down at her chest. 'Mum, why did you have to pass on your flat chest to me?'

Mrs Gu gritted her teeth. 'What? You want your dad's chest? Then your chest will be flatter.'

Gu Jing sighed. 'Mum, what do I need to do to make my breasts bigger?'

'You want bigger breasts?' Mrs Gu asked. She ran to the bathroom and she brought a plunger back to the dining room. 'Little girl, if you use this then your breasts will be bigger.'

'What? Mum, what are you doing holding a plunger?' Gu Jing asked.

'A plunger is a powerful tool, it can unclog any clot in a toilet. If you use it on each of your breast twice a day, your breasts will be bigger,' Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing stared at the plunger in her mum's hand and the thought of putting it on her breasts made her forehead sweaty.

Gu Jing sighed. She suspected it was wrong ask another flat chested person advice about how to own bigger breasts. 'Do you have a better solution?'

'Exercise, like swimming,' Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing's suspicions were confirmed, she asked the wrong person. 'Mum, have you ever seen a professional swimmer with big breasts? Professional swimmers' shoulders are broad and their leg muscles are strong. If they had big breasts, they would drown.'

'Then run,' Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing laughed. 'Mum, have you ever seen a professional runner with big breasts? If they had big breasts they wouldn't be able to run like the wind.'



‘It seems exercising won’t make your breasts bigger. Do you think because I let you learn Taekwondo, it made your breasts smaller?’ Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing lowered her head and she sighed.

‘Aha! Find a man to marry, each day he’ll massage your breasts and your breasts will be bigger,’ Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing’s eyes travelled from the neckline of her shirt to her feet, and nothing obstructed her view of her feet. ‘Mum, you’re lying to me.’

‘Why would I lie to you for?’ Mrs Gu said. She proudly puffed her chest. ‘When I was younger, my breasts weren’t that much bigger than yours. After I married your dad, within a year my bra size doubled.’

‘Whoa! You’re not lying to me?’ Gu Jing said.

‘I promise I’m not lying to you,’ Mrs Gu said.

Mrs Gu didn’t lie to her daughter. Mrs Gu’s breasts were bigger after she married her daughter’s dad and she got pregnant. But she wasn’t going to tell her daughter her breasts were flatter after she gave birth to her daughter.

‘I’m determined to go on arranged dates, get married and have a family because I want bigger breasts,’ Gu Jing said.

Mrs Gu laughed happily, her daughter understood her vision for her daughter’s future. ‘You don’t need to look outside. You have a man at home.’

Gu Jing’s eyes became murderous. ‘Mum, you don’t mean Zhen Lang? I rather have a flat chest for the rest of my life than marrying Zhen Lang. I’m better off finding a female companion than marrying Zhen Lang.’ She envisioned herself with bigger breasts and she was determined to go on arranged dates. ‘I’ll make my breasts bigger! Afterward I need to show Zhen Lang my big breasts!’

Mrs Gu suspected there was something wrong with her daughter’s brain. ‘If you’re not going to marry Zhen Lang then don’t marry him. Why do you need to let him see you have big breasts?’

Gu Jing gave her mum the paper aeroplane she folded from the newspaper. ‘Mum, go and ask Zhen Lang why.’

Gu Jing stood and she walked to the front door.

‘Little girl, where are you going?’ Mrs Gu asked.

‘To socialise. I’m going to go on an arranged date, get married and I’ll shake big breasts home for Zhen Lang to see,’ Gu Jing said and she ran to the elevator.

Later that day, Zhen Lang returned home and he saw Gu Jing’s mum stared at a paper aeroplane in her hand and she mumbled to herself. ‘My daughter has a jelly brain...’

‘Aunty?’ Zhen Lang called.

‘Lang Lang, you’re home. Gu Jing said she wants to go on an arranged date. Your aunty’s daughter finally wants to start a family and I don’t need to worry no man won’t want to marry her anymore... but she said she needs you to see her breasts. Do you think there’s something wrong with her brain... and she said I should give this to you, do you know what it means?’ Mrs Gu said.

Zhen Lang accepted the paper aeroplane from Gu Jing’s mum. His heart calmed and he grinned. He coughed softly. ‘Aunty, don’t you know what Gu Jing is like? Half the day she’s sunny and the other half she’s all cloud and rain. I promise by the end of the night, she’ll be back to normal.’

Mrs Gu nodded her head. ‘You’re right. She’s cray cray. I’m going to forget about her, in two days aunty needs to go home. Help aunty to look out for my cray cray daughter.’

‘Don’t worry aunty, I’ll look out for Gu Jing properly,’ Zhen Lang said.

Mrs Gu stood and she walked to the kitchen.

Zhen Lang sat on the sofa and he stared at the paper aeroplane in his hand. He was still grinning and his eyes shone brightly. He was happy it’d been many years and Gu Jing still remembered clearly.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Ten

***Related***

# Eleven

## Chapter Eleven

At the studio Peng Cheng Gui put a plate of hot buns on the coffee table as a bribe for Gu Jing to confess why Gu Jing was going on arranged dates. Gu Jing's confession was postponed because they saw an expensive luxury silver car parked in front of the studio.

The owner of the silver car was Wang Shao Huang. She walked into the studio and she put a ten thousand Yuan cheque next to the plate of hot buns. 'If you leave Zhen Lang this cheque is yours. If he follows me, my grandpa can give him the brightest future. If you don't leave him... I'll oust your forbidden relationship with him to the media... you know how it's a frowned upon relationship in our home county and it'll ruin his career.'

Gu Jing bit into a hot bun. She didn't care if Wang Shao Huang misunderstood hers and Zhen Lang's relationship. As for the cheque it was petty cash. Her satisfied female clients gave her gifts more valuable than the Wang Shao Huang's cheque so she felt there was no need to accept such petty cash.

'Looking at you, you seem like someone who is appealing to sugar daddies with an acquired taste. If you leave Zhen Lang, I'll introduce you to those men. After you leave Zhen Lang, he'll realise he likes women,' Wang Shao Huang said.

Gu Jing felt like she was in a daydream. She was a poor heroine in a romance drama series on TV, and she was forced by a villainess to leave the hero. She didn't know if she was supposed to cry, rip the cheque in half and declare to Wang Shao Huang – 'I love Zhen Lang, I don't need your money, but I'll leave Zhen Lang.'

The thought of those words to come out from Gu Jing's mouth, formed a cold sweat at the back of her neck.

Peng Cheng Gui stood nearby and she was talking on the phone. But Peng Cheng Gui didn't appreciate Wang Shao Huang's haughty attitude. Peng Cheng Gui secretly exchanged a look with Gu Jing to see whether Gu Jing wanted Peng Cheng Gui to deal with Wang Shao Huang. Gu Jing shook her head and Peng

Cheng Gui continued to talk on the phone.

Gu Jing picked up the calculator on the coffee table and she looked coldly at Wang Shao Huang. 'Is this your best offer for me to leave Zhen Lang?'

'Yes. The two of you are just fooling around with each other. At the most it'll last for three years, ten thousand Yuan is enough for you to end things with Zhen Lang,' Wang Shao Huang said.

'Enough to end things?' Gu Jing asked. She frantically calculated a sum of numbers on the calculator. 'Do you know how much Zhen Lang earns in a month?'

Wang Shao Huang looked confusedly at Gu Jing. Gu Jing's eyes shone brightly and she laughed mockingly. 'Zhen Lang is one of the most sought after cardiothoracic surgeon in the country. He specialises in both lung and heart surgeries. His patients all have severe health complications, think about it how much each of his patient is willing to offer him to operate on them. Would you agree each of his patient would offer him between ten thousand and twenty thousand Yuan? If on average he performs three surgeries per month that means in a year he'll earn at least three hundred thousand Yuan and in three years he'll earn close to one million Yuan.' She pushed the calculator in front of Wang Shao Huang. 'His fixed assets aren't shabby either. If I live with him for three years, I'll get to keep half of his assets that's roughly five hundred thousand Yuan. Add at least three hundred thousand Yuan of his income so I'll get eight hundred thousand Yuan if I end things with him after three years. But you said ten thousand Yuan is your best offer. You need to at least offer me more than eight hundred thousand Yuan before I'll consider your offer. When you can afford to give me a one million Yuan cheque, I promise you I'll strip Zhen Lang naked, tie a bow around him and I'll personally deliver him to your bed.'

Wang Shao Huang looked at the figure on the calculator and her complexion paled. She thought if she gave ten thousand Yuan to a photographer like Gu Jing was a generous offer. She didn't expect Gu Jing to rebuff her offer and shamelessly demand more than eight hundred thousand Yuan for Gu Jing to leave Zhen Lang. If she gave Gu Jing such an outrageous cheque she didn't know how she would explain it to her grandpa.

Gu Jing bit into another bun. 'Ok, if you have nothing else to say then please leave.'

Wang Shao Huang took a deep breath. 'I did a background check on Zhen Lang. Since he worked at the hospital he hasn't been in another relationship with a different man. Put it another way, you just need to disappear and he'll recover his normal senses. Looking at your background, to make someone like you disappear is too easy.'

Gu Jing thought her daydream turned from a romance drama series into a gangster TV drama. She spat the hot bun out of her mouth and it landed in the middle of Wang Shao Huang's chest.

Unfortunately for Wang Shao Huang she chose the wrong day to wear a tight white strapless mini dress.

'Ah!' Wang Shao Huang cried out.

Wang Shao Huang jumped up and down like a prawn put into a pot of boiling water.

Gu Jing thought Wang Shao Huang looked pitiful. She was about to pass Wang Shao Huang a tissue... but she saw two chicken fillets fell on the floor between Wang Shao Huang's legs.

Gu Jing crouched and she poked at the chicken fillets, which was still warm and soft. She lifted her head and she saw Wang Shao Huang covered a flat chest.

Gu Jing's eyes focused on Wang Shao Huang's flat chest and she smiled warmly. 'Oh, it appears we're the same species.'

The humiliated Wang Shao Huang glared at Gu Jing, she turned around and she walked to the front door.

'Wait...' Gu Jing said. She took out her phone and she called Zhen Lang. 'What did you say before? Did you say my relationship with Zhen Lang will only last three years?'

Wang Shao Huang didn't get a chance to reply, because Gu Jing put her phone on speaker. 'Mr Vet, how long have we known each other?'

'Twenty-two years,' Zhen Lang said through the speaker phone.

‘Ok,’ Gu Jing said and she hung up the phone. She looked coldly at Wang Shao Huang. ‘Miss, do you want to use our change room... to reattach your chicken fillets?’

Wang Shao Huang was outraged. She looked at the clock on the wall, it was half an hour since she arrived at the studio. She thought her driver would be back from his stroll, and she could quickly hide in the car without anyone else to see her flat chest.

Wang Shao Huang straightened her back and she continued to walk to the front door, but Peng Cheng Gui’s loud and clear voice stopped her. ‘Earlier I saw a man parked a silver car in front of our studio and he left. But he parked in a no stopping zone. Since he left as a law abiding citizen the only option I had left was to call the local council’s head office and a tow truck was sent here to take the silver car away.’

Wang Shao Huang was right, her driver did return from his stroll. He stood perplexed in front of the studio, his eyes swept his surroundings but there was no silver car.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Eleven

***Related***

# Twelve

## Chapter Twelve

Dollar signs spun inside Peng Cheng Gui's eyes. 'Hey, is Zhen Lang actually loaded?'

Gu Jing shrugged her shoulders. 'Even if his bank account is loaded it is nothing to do with me.'

'That means he's a golden turtle. Why aren't you catching such a good man?' Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing pointed a finger in the direction of the hospital. 'If you think he's such a good man. It's simple, break a rib and you have an opportunity to start your pursuit.'

'We're not compatible... but you and Zhen Lang are. Hehe... after you marry him, I'll help you count your money,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing scoffed. 'Don't you have enough money to count already? You raised my services to give yourself a good profit. Don't act like you're poor.'

'I can never have enough money to count,' Peng Cheng Gui said. The dollar signs inside her eyes turned to golden turtles. 'It's a tiring life for someone like me to live to count money.'

'Hey! The person who travels to take photos is me. How can you say you have a tiring life?' Gu Jing protested.

'Oh! That reminds me, last week a new client requested you to take photos in a country district. I'll give you his number and the two of you can work out the logistics,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

'Go to hell, I already told you I'm visiting my parents' home in a fortnight,' Gu Jing said.

'Postpone your departure date for a few days. You need to prioritise your clients. Besides, he's giving a two thousand Yuan tip for short notice booking,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

‘You sold me for money? Ok, I understand. I’ll visit my parents’ home next month, but I’ll be taking leave for a week,’ Gu Jing compromised.

Peng Cheng Gui’s hands were itchy to count money and she laughed like she was possessed. ‘Ok, deal.’

Gu Jing lazily laid on the sofa. ‘I’m hungry. Do you want to eat a steamed meal from a nearby restaurant?’

Peng Cheng Gui confirmed the client’s booking and she didn’t bother to look away from the computer. ‘Buy it yourself.’

‘I’m too hungry to move. I’m not going to waste my energy to talk anymore or I’ll starve to death,’ Gu Jing said.

‘You don’t have anything to do here. Go home and eat,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

‘I don’t want to go home. The woman at home isn’t my mum. She acts more like she’s Zhen Lang’s mum,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Then you can continue to be hungry,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

The front door opened and Peng Cheng Gui’s unsympathetic voice turned to a sweet greeting voice. ‘Hello dear client... Zhen Lang?’

‘I told you not to mention his name if you don’t need to. If I have anything shady with him, my chest will be flat for the rest of my life. Besides, it’s important for a woman to marry a man who has at least a decent package. I feel sorry for his future wife,’ Gu Jing said.

Peng Cheng Gui couldn’t believe Gu Jing thought a twenty-five year old woman could grow bigger breasts. As for whether Zhen Lang’s package was decent or not, she didn’t need to know. Peng Cheng Gui smiled awkwardly at Zhen Lang. ‘Let me pour you a glass of water.’

‘Thank you, you don’t need to,’ Zhen Lang declined politely.

‘Why am I hallucinating? I think I heard his voice. I must be hungry to point of having hallucinations,’ Gu Jing said.

Peng Cheng Gui smiled apologetically with Zhen Lang. ‘She’s hungry so her reactions are slow.’



Zhen Lang's eyes swept over Gu Jing's lifeless body on the sofa. 'I know.'

'Ah!' Gu Jing cried out. She stood and she glared at Zhen Lang. 'What are you doing here?'

Zhen Lang gave Gu Jing a sickeningly sweet smile. 'Let's go home together.'

Gu Jing lifted her chin. 'No!'

'Auntie wants you to come home,' Zhen Lang said.

'I'm busy...' Gu Jing said weakly.

Zhen Lang laughed. 'Then I'll stay here and wait for you.'

Gu Jing gritted her teeth. 'You!'

Zhen Lang sat comfortably on the sofa. He picked up a photo album from the coffee table and he smiled another sickeningly sweet smile. 'Gu Jing, go ahead and do what you need to do. We'll leave together after you're done.'

'I... need... oh, I have a date,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing triumphantly walked toward the front door in her wrinkled shirt, jeans and sneakers.

'Wait!' Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing rubbed her face. She didn't see any food stains or dribble on her hands so she didn't understand why Peng Cheng Gui wanted to detain her.

Peng Cheng Gui's manicured fingernail poked Gu Jing's wrinkled shirt. 'Are you planning to go on a date wearing this?'

'Why do I need to change clothes? If my date bombs, it's not the end of the world. I just need to say goodbye to my date,' Gu Jing said.

'Hehe... if you fail to impress your date, don't you think it'll give a reason for Zhen Lang to mock you? That's why you need to wear makeup and a beautiful outfit to catch a golden turtle to frustrate Zhen Lang to death,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing looked at Zhen Lang who sat too comfortably on the sofa and she smiled brighter than her hunger. 'Ok, give me a makeover.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twelve

***Related***

# Thirteen

## Chapter Thirteen

Inside the studio makeup room were cries of torture.

‘Ouch! You don’t need to pull my hair... don’t rip my face off... what are you putting on my eyelashes?’ Gu Jing said.

Outside the makeup room, Zhen Lang flipped through a photo album and he was unaffected by Gu Jing’s loud cries.

‘You don’t need to paint my eyelashes like a fly’s leg... you don’t need to put blush on my face to turn me into a dead corpse like in ancient TV drama series... you don’t need to put thick eyeliner on me like I’m a demoness!’ Gu Jing protested.

Peng Cheng Gui gritted her teeth and she glared at the ungrateful Gu Jing. ‘Is my makeup style that poor? If you cry out one more time, I’ll turn you into a geisha!’

Gu Jing closed her eyes, she was too scared to look at her face in the mirror. She felt like she was a ritual sacrifice, but her face was in the hands of Peng Cheng Gui so she didn’t dare to utter another sound. Whilst Peng Cheng Gui happily hummed and sculpted Gu Jing’s face.

The powder on Gu Jing’s face made her itchy and the mascara on her eyelashes made her eyelids felt heavy. She fisted her hands and she endured the torture.

Peng Cheng Gui came back from the studio costume room and she saw Gu Jing sat tensed on the chair in front of the mirror. ‘What’s wrong?’

‘Hehe... I’m scared the powder will fall off my face,’ Gu Jing said.

Peng Cheng Gui tossed a dress onto Gu Jing’s lap. ‘Forget about the powder on your face. Hurry up and change into the dress.’

Gu Jing picked up the thin dress on her lap and she reluctantly walked to the change room.

A short moment later the change room door was slammed opened. Gu Jing

covered her naked chest. 'How am I supposed to wear this dress?'

'You need to take off everything underneath then you can wear the dress,' Peng Cheng Gui said. She saw Gu Jing's stunned face and she sighed. 'I'll help you.'

Gu Jing was like a mannequin and she gave Peng Cheng Gui free reign of her body.

After the dress was forcefully attached to Gu Jing's body, she rubbed her cold legs and she saw the bottom of the dress hem was aligned with her bottom. She rubbed her cold bare shoulders and back. 'Is this how the dress is supposed to be worn? Why is the dress exposing my back? What if I'm not careful and the dress falls off my body?'

'If you don't fight anyone then the dress won't fall off. Put on these heels,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

'Heels? I have never worn heels before,' Gu Jing said.

'Then practice wearing heels and you'll get used to it,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing obediently put on the ten centimetre heels and it completed her transformation. The wig on her head flowed over her collar bone and the front of her strapless dress. The eyeliner and mascara highlighted her beautiful round eyes. The blush contoured her graceful cheekbones. The red lipstick on her lips made her lips looked luscious. The heels accentuated her long slender legs.

'Bingo! I was right about you, you're a natural beauty. Finally I get to see what you look like with makeup and wearing a dress... you look beautiful!' Peng Cheng Gui said.

The newly transformed Gu Jing struggled to step down stairs. Her fingers glided over the white stair rail and she slowly descended toward the handsome Zhen Lang who waited at the bottom of the stairs for her...

'Ah!' Gu Jing cried out.

Gu Jing tripped over her heels and her upper body toppled onto... Zhen Lang's pants.

Zhen Lang braced Gu Jing's bare shoulders and he felt her soft chest on his

pants. She lifted her head and she looked adorably embarrassed. 'I can't believe at my age I can fall this tragically!'

Zhen Lang couldn't help but laugh and his laughter echoed throughout the studio.

Zhen Lang noticed the heels with broken straps next to Gu Jing's thighs. He picked up a heel and he shook it in front of her face. 'Ten centimetres! Gu Jing, you're one metre and seventy-three centimetres tall. Add these heels and you'll be one metre and eight-three centimetres. What are you going to do if your date isn't as tall as me?'

Gu Jing bit her luscious red lips and she glared at Zhen Lang. His body braced her fall so her body didn't hurt... but her pride was hurt because she fell in front of him.

'My consort you don't need to kowtow in front of me, you may stand,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang offered his hand to help Gu Jing stand, but she pushed his hand away, she crawled off his body and she stood.

'Be careful your dress is about to slip down your back,' Zhen Lang warned. He picked up Gu Jing's wig from the floor. 'Gu Jing, your 'long hair' fell off your head.'

Gu Jing put aside her embarrassment. She put one hand on her hip and she pointed her index finger from her free hand at Zhen Lang's nose. 'Zhen Lang you're a jinx as deadly as a comet! Keep your mouth shut!'

Zhen Lang smiled, nodded his head and he obediently kept his mouth shut.

Gu Jing walked to the front door and she put on Peng Cheng Gui's flat shoes. Then she took two steps outside and she realised Zhen Lang's jacket was draped over her bare shoulders and it covered her bare back. She didn't feel as self-conscious in the thin dress as she did before and she relaxed her fisted hands.

Gu Jing exhaled gently. She glanced over her shoulder and she saw Zhen Lang the jinx was following her.

Gu Jing felt like the jinx behind her was always a heavy burden on her

shoulders. She pulled the jinx's jacket closer together to cover her chest and she bravely walked into a cafe close to the studio.

Inside the cafe the aromas of the dinner dishes whetted her appetite, she squeezed her stomach, put on a fake smile and she stepped toward a reserved table.

Gu Jing's date sat at the reserved table. Gu Jing knew her date waited a long time for her by the way he impatiently tapped his fingers on the reserved table and his eyes were glued to his wrist watch.

Gu Jing's date stood and he was about to leave the cafe, but she politely greeted him. 'I'm sorry... are you...'

Gu Jing cursed on the inside, she forgotten her date's name.

'Yes, it's me! You must be Miss Gu,' the man said.

During the time Gu Jing's date stared at her lecherously, she assessed her date. Her date's height was average, he wasn't as tall as Zhen Lang. He wasn't as handsome as Zhen Lang. His charisma was average, he wasn't as charismatic as Zhen Lang.

Gu Jing silently cursed herself for comparing her date to Zhen Lang. She let it slide, because she knew Zhen Lang for too many years and his image was imprinted in her memories so naturally she would compare other men to Zhen Lang.

Gu Jing thought it didn't matter if she compared her date to Zhen Lang as long as her date wasn't Zhen Lang the unlucky jinx.

Gu Jing forced herself to maintain her fake smile and she sat on a chair. She glanced at Zhen Lang who sat at the table in front of her table. She calmed her temper. If Zhen Lang wanted to wait for her then she would let him wait, but she wasn't going to lose her temper in front of her date because of Zhen Lang.

'Miss Gu, perhaps you haven't ate dinner yet. What do you want to order?' the man said and he passed the menu to Gu Jing.

Gu Jing looked dreamily at the steak's juicy name and the lobster bun she knew was delicious. But Peng Cheng Gui's voice boomed inside her head – 'Remember,

you can't let your date see you eat. The way you stuff food into your mouth will scare away your date. You can only drink water!

'I... I'll just drink water,' Gu Jing said pitifully.

'Miss Gu, don't worry this dinner is my treat. Order whatever you like,' the man said and he retrieved the menu from Gu Jing.

Gu Jing's date flipped through the menu and his eyes were shocked to see the expensive prices of the items on the menu.

Gu Jing's eyes weren't focused on her date. Her eyes looked at the two juicy steaks and delicious lobster buns brought to Zhen Lang's table. She licked her lips. She felt it was cruel of Zhen Lang to purposely eat it on his own in front of her.

Zhen Lang smiled and he ignored Gu Jing's fiery dagger aimed at him. He slowly cut a piece of one of his two steaks and he put it into his mouth.

Gu Jing swallowed her saliva. She silently cursed for the two steaks to disappear from Zhen Lang's table.

A waiter came to Gu Jing and her date's table. Her date opened his stingy mouth. 'Give us a plate of fried potato chips and two glasses of water.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirteen

***Related***

# Fourteen

## Chapter Fourteen

Zhen Lang choked on a piece of steak meat. He put his knife and fork down and he drank a sip of water.

Gu Jing secretly gave Zhen Lang a why-didn't-you-choke-to-death look. Then she smiled at her stingy date.

Gu Jing's date passed the plate of fried potato chips to her after he ate most of the chips except for three measly chips.

When the waiter returned Gu Jing's date pretended to be generous, he passed her the menu a second time. 'Miss Gu, feel free to order anything from the menu.'

Gu Jing stared lovingly at Zhen Lang's steak and she pointed at the steak on the menu.

'No, it's too expensive. Take a look, there are only a few pieces of meat but it costs eighty Yuan. Think about how many fried potato chips you can get compared to the pieces of meat. If you go to the shops you can buy a kilogram of meat for eighty Yuan and it'll feed you for a month!' the man said.

Gu Jing smiled stiffly at the waiter and the waiter smiled politely.

Peng Cheng Gui's voice popped inside Gu Jing's head and the voice reminded her to be civil toward her date. Gu Jing sighed and she gave up ordering the steak. Instead she decided to order coffee, because she could eat after the date ended.

Gu Jing pointed at the espresso coffee under the drink section of the menu and the waiter nodded his head.

'No, it's not worth eight Yuan for twenty-five millilitres of coffee. You can buy a jar of coffee at the supermarket for ten Yuan and you'll have enough coffee to drink for a fortnight,' the man said.

Gu Jing's finger that pointed at the espresso coffee caused a dent on the



menu. She glanced at Zhen Lang, he held up a cup of coffee and he smiled at her. She looked back at the waiter and she shook her head. 'I don't need to drink the espresso coffee.'

'Miss Gu, take a look around this place. Its furnishings are average, the music here is average and even the table cloth is cheap. I don't know how this place is reputed as the best cafe in the city,' the man said.

Gu Jing noticed the waiter's face flinched and the waiter walked away from her table. Suddenly her back felt itchy like there were angry eyes focused at her table. But her date felt no shame and he continued to harshly critique the cafe's surroundings.

Gu Jing's date's tactless chin pointed at the tables behind her. 'Miss Gu, turn around and look at the customers sitting behind you. It's no surprise an ugly cafe like this will attract many ugly customers.'

Gu Jing's hands gripped the corners of the table. She wanted to curse her tactless date! She hated men who harshly judged other people the most!

Gu Jing heard Zhen Lang coughed and she glared at his amused face.

'Miss Gu, look at the waiters here. There are tall waiters and short waiters. No consistency-' the man said.

'I'm sorry. I need to...' Gu Jing said and she was about to leave but she noticed Zhen Lang's face glowed triumphantly so she bit her tongue. 'I mean... why don't we talk about something else?'

'Ok. Miss Gu, how much do you earn a month?' the man asked.

Gu Jing vaguely remembered Peng Cheng Gui drilled her monthly earnings into her ears, but the numbers were lost on the way to her brain.

'Miss Gu, it's ok if you're too embarrassed to tell me your monthly earnings. Can you at least tell me if you work in the public or private sector and is your job stable?' the man said.

Gu Jing didn't get a chance to open her mouth, because her date rudely made the wrong assumption.

'Oh... so you're unemployed. It's ok if you're unemployed. I make enough to

support myself and a wife too. My wife won't need to work and she'll be staying at home,' the man said.

Gu Jing thought 'won't need to work' were the first decent words to come out of her date's mouth.

'But...' the man said. His eyes focused on Gu Jing's dress. 'I think women shouldn't care too much about clothes and makeup. It's a waste of money to spend on unnecessary luxury items. There are too many women who overspend on clothes, makeup, bags and shoes on a monthly basis. Why do women need to buy new shoes when the shoes they have aren't broken?'

Gu Jing thought her date was lucky she wasn't Peng Cheng Gui. If Peng Cheng Gui heard him, Peng Cheng Gui would throw her newest pair of shoes at his mouth.

Gu Jing stopped paying attention to her date. She looked at Zhen Lang's empty table, and she saw a waiter rushed to Zhen Lang with a bag of take away containers.

Gu Jing widened her excited eyes. She wanted to go home together with Zhen Lang to... steal his food in the car! She needed to steal her enemy's food, eat all his midnight food and let him starve in the middle of the night!

'Women shouldn't prioritise their looks. They should stay at home and look after children. They don't need to socialise like going to karaoke bars. I hate places like karaoke bars. What a waste of money. Miss Gu, do you go to karaoke bars often?' the man said.

'No,' Gu Jing said and she silently planned to eat Zhen Lang's lobster buns first.

'In the future I'll give my wife a two hundred Yuan monthly allowance. Miss Gu, what do you think?' the man said.

Gu Jing didn't care about her date's future wife's monthly allowance, it was none of her business. 'Is that so?'

'I think two hundred Yuan a month is a generous allowance. My wife can spend fifty Yuan on tops, fifty Yuan on pants and fifty Yuan on shoes and she'll still have fifty Yuan leftover. But if my wife knows how to be thrifty, she won't spend her allowance on unnecessary items... like cigarettes and alcohol. I hate women who

smoke and drink alcohol. Miss Gu, do you smoke or drink alcohol?' the man said.

Gu Jing was hypnotised by Zhen Lang's bag of food and she stood to follow Zhen Lang outside the cafe.

'Miss Gu!' the man called and he stood to chase Gu Jing.

A waiter who guarded the front door put out an arm and he stopped Gu Jing's date from leaving. 'Gentleman, you haven't paid your bill.'

Gu Jing's date quickly paid the bill. 'The service here is poor. I sat here for less than half an hour and the cafe skinned me twenty Yuan. I can buy dozens of buns with twenty Yuan and it'll feed me for a week.'

'Gentleman, I recommend you find yourself a man. Because a man spends less money on clothes, shoes, bags, makeup, haircuts, manicures, pedicures and... a man can save a lot of money each month, because a man doesn't need to buy tampons,' the waiter said.

Gu Jing's date closed his mouth for the first time that day.

The moment Gu Jing sat inside Zhen Lang's car, she grabbed his bag of food. She opened the container lids and he thought her eyes lit up like a hungry puppy's eyes that found food. She bit into a lobster bun and she moaned.

Zhen Lang turned on the ignition. 'Gu Jing, you're eating my midnight food. Pay up.'

Gu Jing ate another lobster bun. She choked and she rubbed her chest. 'I don't have money.'

Zhen Lang tried to take back the containers from Gu Jing's lap, but she protected the containers. She put another lobster bun in her mouth and she smiled at him.

Zhen Lang noticed Gu Jing's blind date was running toward his car. Zhen Lang put his car in drive mode, he stepped on the accelerator and he drove Gu Jing and himself home.

Gu Jing was too busy satisfying her neglected stomach so she didn't pay attention to her abandoned date.

Zhen Lang kept his eyes on the road. 'Next time ask your match maker not to

introduce you to a man who speaks rubbish.'

Gu Jing laughed and she spat out a piece of lobster bun in an unladylike manner. She looked at Zhen Lang. 'How did you know?'

'I could tell by looking at your expressions from where I was sitting at the cafe,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing silently ate another lobster bun. She thought in the world the person who understood her the most was her enemy.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Fourteen

***Related***

# Fifteen

## Chapter Fifteen

The following morning Gu Jing and Peng Cheng Gui ate breakfast together at the studio.

‘Confess. How was last night?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing slurped her noodle broth. ‘Huh? What about last night?’

Peng Cheng Gui’s finger pointed in the direction of the cafe. ‘What happened last night at the cafe?’

‘Oh... the lobster buns were delicious!’ Gu Jing said.

‘Who’s asking you about lobster buns?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing rubbed her stomach. ‘Oh... the seafood fried rice was delicious!’

Peng Cheng Gui pinched Gu Jing’s cheeks. ‘I’m asking you about your first blind date. How was he?’

‘I don’t remember,’ Gu Jing said.

‘You don’t remember? Then what do you remember?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing sighed. She remembered Zhen Lang ate the juicy steak last night. ‘Oh... I remember the steak looked juicy!’

Peng Cheng Gui passed her untouched bowl of noodles to Gu Jing. ‘Gu Jing... what else do you remember?’

‘Mmm... he said he can afford for his wife to stay at home and she doesn’t need to work,’ Gu Jing said and she stuffed more noodles into her mouth.

‘Wow! You met a golden turtle on your first date?’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

‘Mmm... he said he’ll give his wife a two hundred Yuan monthly allowance and he wants his wife to be thrifty,’ Gu Jing said.

Peng Cheng Gui laughed. ‘Hehe... two hundred Yuan?’

Gu Jing slurped more noodle broth. ‘Um, two hundred Yuan.’

‘Why would such a stingy man buy you lobster buns and seafood fried rice? Don’t tell me you paid for dinner?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing laughed. ‘Hehe... I stole Zhen Lang’s lobster buns and seafood fried rice. Hehe... he was hungry in the middle of the night.’

Peng Cheng Gui’s eyes lit up. ‘How did Zhen Lang react last night?’

‘That jinx! He knew I wanted to be on my best behaviour. But he purposely sat at the table in front of me and ate the juicy steak!’ Gu Jing said.

‘Don’t tell me you spent your first date admiring Zhen Lang’s steak?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing frowned. She didn’t want to admit Peng Cheng Gui was right.

Peng Cheng Gui sighed. ‘Where was your brain last night? Didn’t you think about what Zhen Lang was doing?’

‘Like he wanted to follow me and eat food he knew I wanted to eat but couldn’t eat so my stomach would suffer?’ Gu Jing asked.

‘Miss Gu Pig! He used food to lure your attention away from your blind date!’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing fisted her hands and she silently cursed the jinx.

Peng Cheng Gui hugged the new round glass coffee table. ‘Last time I reminded you, don’t break another table!’

Gu Jing looked at the hospital opposite the studio. ‘I won’t break another table. Do you think if he’s a patient in the hospital he works at, will it be embarrassing for him?’

‘Gu Jing, before your second blind date tonight, eat before you go on your date. Then Zhen Lang can’t distract you from your date,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing immediately ordered for food delivery to arrive at the studio before dinner.

Combination rice and steaks were delivered to the studio later that afternoon.

Gu Jing lifted her head from her bowl of combination rice when she heard the front door opened. ‘What are you doing here?’

Zhen Lang brushed a piece of rice off his shirt. 'I came here to see you.'

'Huh? Do you want to die?' Gu Jing asked. She waved a steak bone in the direction of the front door. 'If not, stay far away.'

Zhen Lang smiled and he sat on a chair opposite Gu Jing. He silently watched her eat.

Gu Jing ate another steak. 'Tonight, don't think you can distract me with food.'

Gu Jing ate everything on the coffee table. She felt like she ate too much, but she wasn't going to give Zhen Lang the satisfaction of knowing she was too full. She smiled brightly. 'We can go to the cafe now.'

'Oh... I forgot, tonight I have a consultation with a new patient. I came here to tell you that you'll be going on your second blind date by yourself,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing wanted to throw up on Zhen Lang. She ate pointlessly before her date, because Zhen Lang wasn't going to be sitting opposite her table and eating her favourite food.

'You! Why didn't you tell me before?' Gu Jing said.

'Before wasn't it you who didn't let me speak?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing cheeks bloated and she wanted to throw up.

'In the past you ate too much cake icing and now you don't eat anything sweet. Don't tell me that you ate too much so you won't eat in the future?' Zhen Lang said.

'I'm going to kick you to death!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing stood and she aimed her leg at Zhen Lang's face.

Zhen Lang stood and he avoided Gu Jing's leg aimed at his face.

Peng Cheng Gui rushed down stairs when she heard a loud noise... she saw a shoe dent in the wall one centimetre from Zhen Lang's calm face.

'Gu Jing, do you have anything else to say? If not, I need to go to my consultation,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing regretted her shoe didn't smash Zhen Lang's smug face into one

thousand pieces. 'Wait until my mum leaves. Then we'll settle our score.'

Gu Jing didn't escort Zhen Lang to the front door. She turned around and she saw Peng Cheng Gui was furious. 'You're not allowed to kick the walls, doors or anything else in this studio! If you do, I'll deduct it from your service fee.'

Gu Jing nodded her head and she slowly walked to the cafe.

Inside the cafe Gu Jing sat opposite her second blind date. She suppressed her urge to throw up, but the food aromas in the cafe made it harder for her to keep her mouth closed.

'Miss Gu, the steak here are famous. Can I order us the steaks and desserts?' the gentle man said.

Gu Jing nodded her head. Her throat was alarmed when two plate of steaks and chocolate cakes arrived at her table. She watched her date cut the steak into pieces, and she wanted to escape. She vowed she wasn't going to eat meat for the next three days.

'Miss Gu, did I order the wrong dishes? If you like, I can order something else. Do you like eastern or western dishes?' the gentle man asked.

'No, you don't have to,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing smeared the icing from the top of her chocolate cake onto her steak. She cut the steak into pieces and she forced her mouth to chew a piece of sweet steak. She was on the verge of throwing up whilst her date happily ate his dinner.

Gu Jing comforted her throat that compared to her first blind date, her second blind date wasn't bad.

'Miss Gu, I know this is our first meeting... I'm sorry to ask you directly... but are you a virgin?' the gentle man asked.

Gu Jing's head nearly fell onto her plate of sweet steak from shock.

'I'm ok if you're not a virgin as long as you agree to undergo a hymen repair procedure. These days plastic surgeons provide stitching of the hymen membrane services,' the gentle man said.

Gu Jing spat out the piece of sweet steak she chewed for a long time. She



judged her second blind date as a gentle man too soon!

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Fifteen

***Related***

# part 1

## Chapter Sixteen (Part 1)

‘Miss Gu,’ the gentle man called. He wiped the sweat off his face and he stood to stall Gu Jing. ‘Does my directness bother you?’

‘No,’ Gu Jing said.

Of course Gu Jing wasn’t bothered, because whether he was direct or long winded it was none of her business. She just wanted to go outside for fresh air.

‘I want to continue dating you, but you haven’t answered my question,’ the gentle man said.

‘Answer what? Before you expect something from another person, you need to look at yourself first. Are you a virgin?’ Gu Jing said.

‘How can you compare a man and a woman? In this world who expects a man to be a virgin?’ the gentle man asked.

‘If you’re not a virgin than don’t expect others to be a virgin! You’re the definition of chauvinism,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing didn’t want to waste her breath and she turned around. She was surprised Zhen Lang was at the front door of the cafe.

Gu Jing walked toward the front door and she was scared Zhen Lang heard her chauvinistic date’s question. She didn’t want Zhen Lang to see her embarrassed.

‘Miss Gu!’ the gentle man called and he grabbed Gu Jing’s arm. ‘Even if you’re not a virgin. I don’t mind as long as you undergo the hymen repair procedure. I’ll pay for the procedure.’

The music in the cafe stopped and the cafe’s customers looked in Gu Jing’s direction.

‘Repair your head!’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing pushed the chauvinistic arm away and she pushed him onto a chair. She picked up a knife and she aimed it between his pants.

Luckily when the gentle man fell on the chair his legs were spread apart. But the knife accurately pierced through his pants and the chair, it was perilously close to his crotch.

Gu Jing looked at the floor manager. 'Tomorrow send someone to the studio and I'll compensate for the damaged chair.'

Zhen Lang glanced at the knife, he coughed and he followed Gu Jing outside the cafe.

Gu Jing regretted wearing the dress she had on, because it had no pockets. She kicked one of the wheels of Zhen Lang's car. She hated handbags and she was used to putting her phone, keys and wallet inside her pants pocket. She wanted to take the taxi home, but she realised she left her phone, keys and wallet at the studio which was closed.

Gu Jing had no money, no phone and she didn't want to walk home in uncomfortable heels. She thought Zhen Lang was an authentic jinx.

Outside the cafe Zhen Lang thought Gu Jing looked beautiful in her tight dress, but what amused him was that she looked like she regretted she couldn't kick too high in her tight dress. He watched her kick one of his car wheels and he smiled.

'What are you doing here?' Gu Jing asked.

'After my consultation I came here to drink a cup of coffee before going home. Because I thought if I go home too early and see you for a second it'll feel like I've seen you for a year too long,' Zhen Lang said. He opened the front passenger door. 'I didn't think everywhere I go I would see you.'

Gu Jing sat inside Zhen Lang's car. 'I'll pay for the ride home.'

Zhen Lang closed the door for Gu Jing and he went to sit in the driver's seat. He turned on the ignition and he drove home.

Gu Jing felt nauseous in the car, it was quiet and only her deep breaths were heard.

'What's wrong? Are you too full and it's hard for you to breathe?' Zhen Lang asked.

‘Keep your distance from me. It starts tomorrow,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Gu Jing, help me find my work documents. It’s inside the compartment in front of you,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing opened the compartment and she looked for Zhen Lang’s documents. She didn’t find his documents, but she found a new packet of digestive tablets, a new bottle of water and a sealed bag of sour dried apple slices.

‘It’s not inside the compartment,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Ok,’ Zhen Lang said and he kept his eyes on the road.

Gu Jing glanced at Zhen Lang and she was happy he wasn’t looking at her. She quickly took two digestive tablets, drank a sip of water and she put a dried apple slice into her mouth.

The dried apple slice was delicious. Gu Jing grabbed the bag of dried apple slices and she closed the compartment. ‘Zhen Lang, you don’t eat junk food. I opened it first, it belongs to me now.’

‘Pay me for it,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘I didn’t bring money,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing put another dried apple slice into her mouth and she conveniently forgot she promised Zhen Lang she would pay him for the ride home.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Sixteen (Part 1)

***Related***

## part 2

### Chapter Sixteen (Part 2 of 2)

In the morning Gu Jing didn't sleep in, because she remembered she left her wallet at the studio. She had two choices, she could either borrow money from her mum for a taxi or she could get a free ride to the studio from Zhen Lang. Of course she wisely chose the latter choice.

Gu Jing sneaked to Zhen Lang's bedroom door, but it was firmly shut.

'Zhen Lang left already. He had an emergency surgery in the middle of the night. He's not like you who sleeps like a pig. You didn't even hear him leave,' Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing wanted to ask how she was supposed to hear Zhen Lang leave if she closed her bedroom door at night. But her bigger problem was Zhen Lang wasn't home. Who was going to drive her to the studio? She didn't want to beg her mum for ten Yuan for a taxi ride.

'Mum...' Gu Jing said. Suddenly she saw her wallet, keys and phone on top of the shoe rack.

'What?' Mrs Gu asked.

'Nothing,' Gu Jing said and she ran to the shoe rack.

'Little girl, your older cousin wants me to come home tomorrow to help look after Dou Dou,' Mrs Gu said.

But no one replied to Mrs Gu, because her daughter ran to the elevator.

Gu Jing took a taxi to the studio and she grilled Peng Cheng Gui.

'I gave it to Zhen Lang to give it to you, because you were at the cafe,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing cracked her knuckles. 'Why didn't you give it to me yourself? You know I don't like owing others favours.'

'Would you rather owe Zhen Lang or walk home?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

‘Cheng Cheng, you could have given it to me yourself and afterward you could have driven me home,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Drive you home? I worked overtime last night. You ate my dinner and I was hungry the whole night,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

‘Oh? If you worked overtime last night then you could have waited for me to come back. Why did you ask him to give it to me?’ Gu Jing said.

‘I didn’t think of that,’ Peng Cheng Gui said and she ate her breakfast. ‘Tell me about last night.’

‘Nothing good to talk about. I keep bumping into the jinx. Can you help me purify the jinx?’ Gu Jing said.

‘Actually... it’s easy to purify him,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

‘Truly?’ Gu Jing asked.

‘Try it once and see if it works. It’s better than can’t marrying you off,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing hugged Peng Cheng Gui’s neck. ‘What’s your solution? Cheng Cheng, hurry up and tell me.’

‘You know him best,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing did know Zhen Lang best, but she didn’t know if he had a weakness.

‘What do you thinking about me knocking him unconscious and tying him up with a rope? My mum’s leaving tomorrow,’ Gu Jing said.

‘So each time you have a failed date, you want to go home and knock him unconscious?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing realised her suggestion wasn’t effective.

Peng Cheng Gui patted Gu Jing’s arms that hugged her neck. ‘It’s easy, deal with him the same way you deal with me.’

‘You... you’re not suggesting I hug Zhen Lang?’ Gu Jing asked.

Peng Cheng Gui stood. ‘Try it once. Sucking up to him is a good solution.’

Gu Jing felt like she was struck by lightning. Suck up to Zhen Lang? But her

mum was leaving and she didn't want to go back to her apartment in a bad neighbourhood either.

Gu Jing couldn't live with Peng Cheng Gui, because Peng Cheng Gui lived with her parents and grandparents.

Gu Jing returned to Zhen Lang's home after work. She decided since she lived at Zhen Lang's home for a while it wouldn't matter if she stayed at his home for a few more days.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Sixteen (Part 2 of 2)

***Related***

# part 1

## Chapter Seventeen (Part 1)

Zhen Lang opened his front door and he was surprised Gu Jing was smiling and waiting for him to come home.

Zhen Lang looked at Gu Jing from head to toe and he closed the front door. 'Did you nail a smiling facial mask on your face?'

Gu Jing grabbed Zhen Lang's suitcase with too much force, because his body nearly fell on top of her body. He thought she looked like a puppy who was begging for food.

Zhen Lang looked down at his body to check if Gu Jing put anything suspicious on his clothes. 'Gu Jing, what do you want to ask?'

'Mmm... I want to treat you to dinner,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang raised an eyebrow. 'Treat me to dinner?'

Gu Jing nodded her head.

Zhen Lang smiled and he shook his head. 'Gu Jing are you cooking? Then forget it. I want to live for several more years.'

Gu Jing's civil face turned into a scary scowl. She suppressed her hot temper and she smiled brighter. 'I'm treating you to a meal at a restaurant.'

Zhen Lang looked suspiciously at Gu Jing from head to toe for a long time. 'Tell me, what do you need from me?'

Gu Jing was used to Zhen Lang seeing straight through her.

'My old landlord is renovating the small apartment I was leasing. I want to ask you to let me stay here for a few days. After I find a new apartment I'll leave... I'll pay you rent money,' Gu Jing said.

'That's it? In the past you shamelessly came in and out of here. Why are you suddenly being courteous?' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing pouted her lips. 'I don't want to fight with you. Let's call a truce, ok?'



Zhen Lang contemplated about what Gu Jing was planning.

‘Are you going to go out with me to eat dinner or not?’ Gu Jing asked. She glared at Zhen Lang who was looking at her suspiciously and she suppressed her urge to hit him. ‘I’m hungry.’

Unexpectedly Zhen Lang didn’t open the front door, he walked toward the kitchen. Gu Jing’s stomach rumbled, but she followed him like a puppy attached to its owner.

Zhen Lang took off his jacket, he unbuttoned his collar and he rolled up his sleeves. ‘If you want to stay here, you need to work.’ He waved a finger to signal Gu Jing to step closer to him. ‘If your performance is satisfactory, I’ll consider letting you stay.’

Gu Jing thought there was something wrong with Zhen Lang’s brain. She wondered if he wanted her to burn his kitchen then demand her to pay him for kitchen renovations. ‘You want me to cook?’

Zhen Lang gave Gu Jing a plump potato and a knife. ‘It’s the weekend tomorrow. So tonight many people will be going out to eat. If we go out and eat, we’ll need to wait at least an hour to be served. If we eat at home, we’ll be fed faster.’

The faster Gu Jing could eat the better. She quickly peeled the potato and the rubbish bin looked more nourished than the peeled potato in her hand. She presented the under nourished potato to Zhen Lang and she smiled sweetly. ‘Satisfied?’

Zhen Lang put another plump potato in Gu Jing’s hand.

‘Why aren’t you saying anything about the potato I peeled for you?’ Gu Jing asked.

‘I didn’t think a plump potato under your hands would turn into an anorexic potato. You need to peel another potato,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing obediently peeled the second potato. A potato peel was accidentally flung on Zhen Lang’s pants. She lifted her hand to take the potato peel off his pants, but her hand froze in mid-air.

Gu Jing squatted, she laughed and she pointed at the potato peel that landed in the middle of Zhen Lang's crotch. 'Potato peel!'

Zhen Lang calmly flicked the potato peel off his pants. 'After you peel the potato, sweep the floor and empty the rubbish bin.'

'Ok,' Gu Jing said.

'After dinner, you'll wash the dishes,' Zhen Lang said.

'Ok,' Gu Jing said.

'You'll tidy the kitchen,' Zhen Lang said.

'Ok,' Gu Jing said.

'You'll clean the living room,' Zhen Lang said.

'Ok,' Gu Jing said.

'After you shower, you'll clean the bathroom,' Zhen Lang said.

'Ok,' Gu Jing said.

'You'll serve me a bowl of soup at midnight,' Zhen Lang said.

'Why do I have to serve you a bowl of soup?' Gu Jing protested.

'You wanted a truce,' Zhen Lang said.

'Ok...' Gu Jing said reluctantly.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Seventeen (Part 1)

***Related***

## part 2

### Chapter Seventeen (Part 2 of 2)

Gu Jing was captivated by Zhen Lang's cooking skills. He tossed a pan of stir fried vegetables with one hand, he held a ladle with his other hand to stir a pot of soup. Occasionally he glanced at the electric rice cooker.

Gu Jing was envious how she and Zhen Lang grew up under the same sky, but he was a natural genius and he didn't struggle with anything. On the other hand she struggled with everything. She studied hard in school whilst he excelled through school without a sweat. She couldn't peel a potato but he could grow a potato patch if he wanted to.

Zhen Lang pointed a finger at the bowl of unwashed herbs. 'Wash the herbs.'

Gu Jing snapped out of her envy. She filled the kitchen sink with water and she washed the herbs. She dried the herbs and drops of water were accidentally flung onto Zhen Lang's shirt and pants.

Gu Jing widened her innocent eyes.

Zhen Lang smiled. 'Remember to mop the floors.'

Gu Jing wanted to mop his smug face! She smiled sweetly. 'Ok.'

During dinner Gu Jing's chopsticks never left her hand. She didn't want to admit Zhen Lang's home cooked meals were delicious.

Gu Jing leaned back on her chair and she rubbed her satisfied stomach. Not even a grain of rice was left on the dining table.

'Go wash the dishes,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing's good mood was ruined by Zhen Lang's bossy mouth. She stretched her arms and legs. Then she walked slowly to the kitchen.

Zhen Lang sat on the sofa and he heard the sounds of broken plates and bowls. He turned around to watch Gu Jing destroy his kitchen and he smiled.

'Hey Mr Vet... your fragile plates and bowls are broken. I'll compensate by washing the dishes tomorrow,' Gu Jing said. She carried a wet mop into the living

room. 'I'll mop the floors.'

Zhen Lang watched Gu Jing crazily mopped the living room floor like she was running a marathon. He wasn't surprised the mop broke in half.

'I... tomorrow I'll buy you a new mop. Tomorrow I'll mop the floors as well,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang stood and he walked passed Gu Jing. 'I'm taking shower.'

'Wait! I'll clean the bathroom for you,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang sat on the sofa again and he heard the sounds of his bathroom being abused.

Gu Jing returned to the living room with a wet shirt and a faucet in her hand. 'Hehe... it was an accident. I was cleaning the bathroom and this faucet fell on its own.' She tossed the faucet in the rubbish bin. 'Tomorrow I'll buy you a new faucet.'

Gu Jing presented a red apple to Zhen Lang. 'The bathroom is spotless. Do you want me to peel an apple for you to eat before you shower?'

Zhen Lang accepted the red apple from Gu Jing. 'I'll peel it myself.'

'Hehe... I'll scoop you a bowl of soup and it'll cool down by the time you come out of the bathroom,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang quickly showered. He came out of the bathroom and Gu Jing kept her promise, she held a bowl of soup for him. 'Zhen Lang, it's cooled down. You can eat it.'

Zhen Lang saw the anticipation in Gu Jing's eyes, he accepted the bowl of soup, he drank a sip and he smiled.

Zhen Lang carried the bowl of soup to his room.

Half an hour later Gu Jing heard the toilet flushed several times and she smiled. She happily massaged her sore arms, legs and waist.

Gu Jing threw the empty small bottle of laxatives in the rubbish bin and she hummed to her bedroom. She kicked her bedroom door open and she jumped onto her bed. She cursed Zhen Lang on her bed. 'You dare treat me like your

housemaid? You'll be lucky if your intestines don't burst tomorrow!

Gu Jing rolled around on her bed. She was happy the jinx couldn't follow her to see her third blind date on the weekend. 'Finally I'm free of the jinx!'

The following morning was a weekend and Gu Jing happily broke her rule about sleeping in on a weekend. She woke up early and she passed Zhen Lang's bedroom on the way to the bathroom. She was ecstatic his bedroom door was firmly shut.

Gu Jing brushed her teeth and she washed her face. She hummed and she was about to open the bathroom door from the inside, but Zhen Lang opened the bathroom door from the outside.

'Do you have a blind date today?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing didn't understand how Zhen Lang recovered quickly from last night. If she knew the small bottle of laxatives wasn't effective then she would buy the large bottle of laxatives. She smiled sweetly. 'Um.'

Zhen Lang walked into the bathroom and he washed his face. 'We'll go together.'

Gu Jing was outraged. The jinx was actually going to follow her on another blind date? How was she going to catch a husband if the jinx was there to spoil the atmosphere?

'Zhen Lang, you don't need to follow me,' Gu Jing said.

'You broke our promise,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing sighed. Why did Zhen Lang need to be a genius who owned a photographic memory?

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Seventeen (Part 2 of 2)

***Related***

# Eighteen

## Chapter Eighteen

‘I didn’t do anything,’ Gu Jing denied.

‘You promised you wouldn’t ambush me anymore. It appears last night you forgot,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing lifted her chin. ‘Yes, I promised I wouldn’t ambush you. But can you say that you have no intentions to sabotage my blind dates by following me... what I did wasn’t ambush, it was retaliation,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Ok, since you owe me, I’ve thought of what I want from you,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Truly?’ Gu Jing asked.

‘Truly. If you let me follow you then you don’t need to fulfil our promise anymore,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Are you certain? If you’re certain, in the future if you provoke me then I’m not going to hold back anymore,’ Gu Jing said.

‘I’m certain,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing felt like a heavy weight was taken off her shoulders. ‘I hope you won’t regret it.’

Zhen Lang nodded his head, he turned around and he walked to his bedroom.

Gu Jing stared outside the sunny window and she beamed.

Gu Jing remembered that year on her birthday she posted a photo of Zhen Lang and Lin Tu Shen in bed together on their school’s intranet. Gu Jing walked passed a classroom and she saw Chen Wei ran outside and tears flowed down Chen Wei’s cheeks. Gu Jing glanced inside the classroom, and she only saw Zhen Lang inside the classroom. Gu Jing didn’t know what Zhen Lang said to Chen Wei, but Gu Jing felt like a sinful girl. That night inside her room she drank beer under a full moon, and she reflected how Zhen Lang was her enemy but they never involved others in their fights before. Gu Jing was deeply ashamed she hurt Chen Wei by breaking up Chen Wei’s relationship with Zhen Lang as a consequence of

her revenge on Zhen Lang... Gu Jing wanted to ruin Zhen Lang's happiness, but she never wanted to hurt an innocent bystander.

The day after the photo incident Gu Jing wanted to find Chen Wei to apologise and explain the truth about the photo to Chen Wei. But Chen Wei's classmates said Chen Wei transferred to an overseas school. Since the photo incident, Zhen Lang never had another girlfriend and Gu Jing noticed Zhen Lang kept his distance from other girls except for Gu Jing.

At that time Gu Jing and Zhen Lang was passed the age they could tattle and get their parents to resolve their disputes. So Gu Jing took the initiative to apologise to Zhen Lang, and she promised she would compensate him for his heartbreak. But he didn't request any kind of compensation from her, and her promise silently hung between them.

In the last few years, Gu Jing purposely avoided Zhen Lang. If he seek her out and he provoked her, she would hold back her rage because she felt guilty for breaking up his first love.

Gu Jing was relieved Zhen Lang finally told her what compensation he wanted. After she granted his request she wouldn't owe him anything, and she wouldn't need to hold back anymore if he provoked her... but she didn't understand why he requested to follow her on her blind dates. Did he wanted to sabotage her chances to get married to take revenge on her for breaking up his and Chen Wei's relationship?

Gu Jing stared at Zhen Lang's closed bedroom door, she was curious to see if he could successfully sabotage her third blind date.

Zhen Lang drove Gu Jing to the cafe where her name was infamous... and it wasn't because she was a loyal customer who loved the cafe's steaks and lobster buns.

Zhen Lang drove the car to a nearby parking bay so Gu Jing entered the cafe first.

'Miss Gu, do you have another blind date?' a waiter asked and he smiled.

'Hehe... about what happened last time I was here, please apologise to your boss for me,' Gu Jing said.

‘Miss Gu, my boss said his cafe will always open its doors for you. He said it was the right time to renovate the cafe, and if you want to damage anything he is happy to send one of his waiters to your cafe to receive compensation,’ a waiter said.

Gu Jing thought her hot temper was infamous within a five kilometre radius of the studio.

Gu Jing smiled and she stepped closer to the waiter. She spoke softly. ‘Ask your boss for me if his office needs renovating.’

The waiter laughed awkwardly and he fled from the infamous Gu Jing.

The cafe’s customers’ eyes were focused on Gu Jing the moment she entered the cafe. Gu Jing was a beautiful woman, but they were curious if the rumours were true that underneath her beauty was someone who was blood thirsty for justice and an invincible fighter.

Gu Jing sat at a reserved table and she drank a glass of water. She was happy her third blind date stood her up, but more importantly there were no sightings of Zhen Lang inside the cafe.

Gu Jing looked at the clock on the cafe’s wall, her third blind date was unfashionably late. She didn’t want to waste any more time waiting for a stranger. She stood to leave, but a waiter stopped her.

A waiter put a cup of coffee on Gu Jing’s table and he pointed to a handsome man who sat at a nearby table. ‘Miss Gu, the gentleman over there wants to treat you to a cup of coffee.’

Gu Jing saw the handsome man lifted his cup of coffee and he smiled at her.

Gu Jing thought the cafe was a sophisticated cafe. The cafe’s furnishings were extravagant eye candies. But she felt the cafe’s appearance paled compared to Zhen Lang’s attractiveness and charisma. Whenever Zhen Lang sat at one of the cafe’s tables, he stood out like a master overseeing his creations. She thought the man who wanted to treat her a cup of coffee was handsome, but the man didn’t surpass Zhen Lang’s handsomeness.

Gu Jing gestured for the waiter to return the cup of coffee on her table back to the handsome man.



The handsome man stood and he strode toward Gu Jing. 'Miss Gu, I'm sorry I arrived late. Will you accept this cup of coffee as a peace offering and forgive me?'

Gu Jing smiled. 'Didn't you arrive earlier than me? How can you say you arrived late?'

Gu Jing realised the handsome man was her third blind date. She struggled to remember his name. She thought perhaps his name was Di Ruan Wei.

'Mr Di, I accept your apology. But we don't need to sit and chat together,' Gu Jing said.

'Oh? Why?' Di Ruan Wei asked.

Gu Jing heard the cafe's front door opened, it was Zhen Lang. She turned around and she looked at Di Ran Wei. 'First, can I ask you two personal questions?'

'Miss Gu, feel comfortable to ask me anything,' Di Ruan Wei said.

'My first personal question is, do you want a submissive housewife or do you want an independent wife who has her own career?' Gu Jing asked.

'I'll respect my wife's work decisions,' Di Ruan Wei said.

'My second personal question is, do you expect your wife to be a virgin?' Gu Jing asked.

Di Ruan Wei smiled and he shook his head. 'What man living in this modern era would expect such a thing from his wife? Honestly, I'm not a virgin which is why I don't expect my wife to be a virgin.'

Gu Jing was satisfied with Di Ran Wei's answers to her questions. She thought perhaps she finally had a blind date who was a normal man.

'Now can we sit and chat together?' Di Ruan Wei asked.

Gu Jing hesitated whether to stay or leave the cafe. But she felt Zhen Lang's burdensome shadow behind her back... she felt like she was a poor heroine caught in a love triangle in a TV romance drama series, she got a bad feeling.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Eighteen

***Related***

# Nineteen

## Chapter Nineteen

Gu Jing moved the menu to obstruct her vision of Zhen Lang who sat at a table in front of her table.

‘The match maker asked me the same questions you asked me before. They told me about your special conditions before they let me meet you,’ Di Ruan Wei said.

‘Oh... ok,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing reminded herself she needed to stop looking at Zhen Lang, because she needed to pay attention to her third blind date.

‘I think a woman like you who has special conditions knows what she wants. I love women who are decisive and I requested to meet you. But it’s my first blind date and I was nervous. That’s why I came earlier to see if you looked decent. If you didn’t look decent I would have left. I’m sorry I made you wait,’ Di Ruan Wei said.

Gu Jing watched Zhen Lang read a book and she wondered why he didn’t make any moves.

‘Oh... ok,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing drank a sip of coffee.

Di Ruan Wei saw Gu Jing didn’t open any sugar packets. ‘Miss Gu, do you like to drink bitter coffee?’

‘Um,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing glared at Zhen Lang who drank a cup of coffee she knew wouldn’t taste bitter.

‘Not many women like to drink bitter coffee. Miss Gu, you’re not an ordinary woman,’ Di Ruan Wei said.

Gu Jing wanted to curse – ‘Of course I’m ordinary! I forgot to put sugar in my coffee because the jinx is acting suspicious.’

Gu Jing watched Zhen Lang sit like a mountain. She caught him smiling and eavesdropping!

Gu Jing chanted to herself – ‘Don’t look at the jinx.’

Gu Jing propped her hand on a cheek to stop herself from looking at Zhen Lang.

‘Miss Gu, the match maker gave me your profile. On your profile you wrote you never experienced love before, is it true?’ Di Ruan Wei said.

Gu Jing nodded her head. ‘Something like that.’

During elementary and high school Gu Jing obsessed over how to get on the national Taekwondo team. During college she obsessed over how to deal with Zhen Lang. In the last three years she and Peng Cheng Gui focused their energies on the studio. In Gu Jing’s life, love didn’t exist. Not even a peacock or cockroach showed interest in her.

‘I lived a simple life for twenty-five years. There isn’t going to be anyone significant in my life,’ Gu Jing said.

‘What are you saying? Xiao Long Nu waited sixteen years for Yang Guo,’ Di Ruan Wei said.

In that moment Gu Jing felt she could die happy without regrets, because someone praised her as Xiao Long Nu’s counterpart in the modern era.

Gu Jing heard Zhen Lang spat out coffee and he coughed. She didn’t need to look at him, because she knew he had a mocking smile on his face. She wished she had Xiao Long Nu’s martial arts skills then she could extend her hidden long sash and slap the smile off Zhen Lang’s face.

‘Miss Gu, are you waiting for Yang Guo?’ Di Ruan Wei asked.

Gu Jing glared at Zhen Lang. She heard his laugh. She wanted to ask him – ‘Did you laugh enough? You laughed for a whole minute already!’

‘I’m waiting for Zhen Zhi Bing,’ Gu Jing said carelessly.

Gu Jing saw Zhen Lang spat out coffee. He didn’t smile but his shoulders shook.

Gu Jing reluctantly looked at her third blind date. She silently cursed the jinx

for distracting her and causing her embarrassed state.

‘I didn’t mean it in that way... I... I didn’t meant it... I...’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing didn’t know how to explain her careless words. She wisely closed her mouth and she smiled stiffly.

Gu Jing heard Zhen Lang’s phone rang.

‘Hello aunty Gu,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing maintained her stiff smile and she eavesdropped on Zhen Lang and her mum’s phone conversation.

‘Aunty, she didn’t pick up your calls?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang looked at Gu Jing and he smiled. She patted her dress for a small pocket and she frowned because she forgot her phone.

‘She forgot her phone,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing panicked. Before her mum left, her mum warned her not to go on anymore blind dates. She nodded her head because she didn’t want to hear her mum nag her.

‘Where did she go?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing pressed her palms against her table. She didn’t want Zhen Lang to expose her. If her mum knew she placated her mum then her mum would return to the city and punish her for her deceit.

Gu Jing looked pitifully at Zhen Lang and she silently begged him not to expose her. He gave her a be-my-housemaid look. She reluctantly nodded her head as a promise to be his housemaid and to do all housework without breaking anything.

Zhen Lang nodded his head. ‘She’s with me at a restaurant. She just went to the bathroom. When she comes back I’ll tell her to call aunty.’

Gu Jing saw Zhen Lang hung up his phone and she exhaled gently. He didn’t expose her, but she felt more nervous and restless.

‘Miss Gu! Can I take you somewhere else for lunch?’ Di Ruan Wei said.

‘Oh... ok,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing looked away from Zhen Lang and she struggled to pay attention to her third blind date.

Gu Jing assessed her third blind date. He was handsome, confident, he had a straight nose and a charming smile but his eyes twinkled like a player. He gave her his business card – ‘Di Ruan Wei, lawyer.’

On Di Ruan Wei’s business card he wrote his personal phone number on it for Gu Jing. Gu Jing looked at Zhen Lang and she smiled triumphantly. She finally found a potential boyfriend and after she got married she would shake her big breasts in front of Zhen Lang.

Gu Jing heard Zhen Lang’s phone rang again and it broke her daydream.

Zhen Lang looked at Gu Jing, he smiled and he put his phone on speaker. ‘Aunt Gu, did you forget to say something before?’

‘Are you certain Gu Jing is with you at a restaurant? Then remember to tell her to call me when she comes back from the bathroom,’ Mrs Gu said.

‘She’s not back yet. Aunt, if it’s urgent you can tell me and I’ll pass on your message to her,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Tell the little girl summer is here and she shouldn’t run wild outside. She should stay home and do more housework like washing dishes, mopping the floor and cleaning the bathroom. You shouldn’t dote on her and you should let her do all the housework,’ Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing gritted her teeth because her mum turned her into a free housemaid, it meant she was adopted.

‘If she doesn’t learn how to do housework then in the future no one will want to marry her. Lang Lang, remember not to indulge her. If you go buy bags of rice remember to let her carry them for you. Let her do all the housework and you can rest,’ Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing fisted her hands and her lips trembled.

‘Remember to tell her to wash her bras and underwear. You can give her your underwear to wash too-’ Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing stood and she strode to Zhen Lang’s table. She grabbed his phone.

‘Mum, why didn’t you tell me to wash his body and spoon feed him food and drinks? Is there anything else you want to say?’

‘You actually went out to eat with Zhen Lang? Then tell him to eat more nutritious food and tell him to take better care of his body. Remember you shouldn’t bully him. You should do all the housework and remember to wash all his clothes-’ Mrs Gu said.

‘Mum, stop nagging. I know! I’ll wash his feet and his bottom too, satisfied?’ Gu Jing said.

‘Little girl! How dare you say I’m nagging you-’ Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing threw Zhen Lang’s phone onto Zhen Lang’s lap. ‘Out of battery.’

Zhen Lang pointed a finger behind Gu Jing. She turned around and her third blind date looked back and forth suspiciously at her and Zhen Lang.

On the inside Gu Jing cursed herself – ‘What did I say before? Heavens, please send a lightning bolt to strike me dead!’

Gu Jing pulled up Zhen Lang’s arm and she forced both of their hands to wave at her third blind date. She smiled sweetly at her third blind date. ‘He is my big brother.’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Nineteen

***Related***

# Twenty

## Chapter Twenty

Gu Jing pinched Zhen Lang's hand.

Zhen Lang retrieved his hand and he shook hands with the man in front of him.  
'I'm Zhen Lang.'

'Your family name is Zhen?' Di Ruan Wei asked.

'Um. My big brother follows his dad's family name,' Gu Jing said.

'Oh! I see,' Di Ruan Wei said.

Gu Jing laughed awkwardly and Zhen Lang glared at her.

'There is a Chinese restaurant nearby. Let's all go there and eat together,' Zhen Lang said.

'Ok. First let me pay for us,' Di Ruan Wei said.

Gu Jing looked smugly at Zhen Lang.

Zhen Lang ignored Gu Jing's smugness. When the man opened his leather wallet to pay, Zhen Lang smiled.

The three of them left the cafe and Zhen Lang drove Gu Jing to the Chinese restaurant.

'Mr Vet, why are you eating lunch with us?' Gu Jing asked.

'Didn't you say I'm your big brother? Is it too much to ask you to eat lunch with your big brother?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing couldn't argue because Zhen Lang didn't expose they weren't siblings in front of her third blind date. Instead she thought about the delicious food at the Chinese restaurant.

Inside the restaurant Zhen Lang picked up food into Gu Jing's bowl and he chatted with the man.

'Mr Di are you working as a lawyer for Mr Han's law firm?' Zhen Lang asked.



‘Um,’ Di Ruan Wen said.

‘Is uncle Han Xiang well?’

‘You know my boss?’ Di Ruan Wei asked.

Di Ruan Wei didn’t expect Gu Jing’s big brother knew his boss. His boss’ law firm was the best in the city and their clients were rich and influential people.

‘Um, we met a few times,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang omitted he was Han Xiang’s doctor and he performed a minor surgery on Han Xiang.

Gu Jing lifted her head from her empty bowl and she wanted to tell her third blind date about Zhen Lang’s job, but Zhen Lang distracted her.

‘Do you want to eat crabs?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang picked up crabs and he put the crabs in his empty bowl. He peeled off the crab shells and he put the crab meat into Gu Jing’s bowl.

Gu Jing happily ate the crab meat Zhen Lang peeled for her and she didn’t bother to listen to Zhen Lang and her third blind date’s conversation.

‘I just remembered, aunty Gu didn’t get to say everything before my phone battery died. Little sister, do you think aunty thinks you hung up my phone on purpose?’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing dropped the piece of crab meat she held between her chopsticks into her bowl. She worried her mum would suspect she purposely hung up Zhen Lang’s phone and her mum would punish her later.

‘I need to call mum and explain,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing stood to go outside, but Zhen Lang pulled her back onto her chair.

‘Little sister it’s better if I explain,’ Zhen Lang said. He stood. He looked at the man and he smiled. ‘I’ll go outside to look for a phone booth to call mum. You two stay here and chat.’

Gu Jing heard how Zhen Lang called her mum ‘mum’ intimately that even she believed they were siblings.

‘Use my phone, these days phone booths are hard to find,’ Di Ruan Wei said.

Zhen Lang accepted the man's phone. 'Thank you.'

Zhen Lang walked outside to send text messages. Then he walked inside and he sat next to Gu Jing.

Zhen Lang returned the phone back to the man. He scooped a bowl of soup for Gu Jing and he chatted politely with the man for a while.

'Little sister, are you full?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing rubbed her belly and Zhen Lang laughed. 'It's good you're full.'

A pretty young girl walked into the restaurant.

'Can I ask if-' the first girl said to a waiter. But the girl spotted Di Ruan Wei and she walked to his table. 'Ruan Wei, you're here?'

Zhen Lang saw the man looked shock. He stood and he pulled out a chair next to the man. 'Miss if you know Mr Di then sit with us.'

'If I knew Ruan Wei was here then I wouldn't have come,' the first girl said.

Zhen Lang smiled politely. 'Miss how do you know Mr Di?'

'I'm Di Ruan Wei's girlfriend,' the first girl said.

Di Ruan Wei's face turned bleach white.

Another pretty young girl walked into the restaurant. She heard Di Ruan Wei's voice and she walked to his table.

'Hello, I'm Di Ruan Wei's girlfriend,' the second girl said.

'Who are you? When did Di Ruan Wei date you?' the first girl asked.

'Ruan Wei, tell her I'm your girlfriend,' the second girl said.

Gu Jing ate a small bun and her eyes looked back and forth between the two girls fighting.

The first girl put a hand on Di Ruan Wei's shoulder. 'You vixen! This is my boyfriend.'

'Look at yourself. Even if you paid someone to date you no one would want you,' the second girl said.

'He and I have a child together. How can I not be his girlfriend?' the first girl

said.

‘You only have one child with him. I have two children with him,’ the second girl said.

Gu Jing threw half a bun on the table. She couldn’t believe girls in the modern era competed about how many children they had.

Di Ruan Wei wanted to explain to Gu Jing, but another pretty young girl walked into the restaurant.

The third girl walked toward Di Ruan Wei. ‘I’m Di Ruan Wei’s wife-’

‘How many children do you have with him?’ the second girl asked.

‘I don’t have any children with him,’ the third girl said.

‘Then aren’t you ashamed to call yourself his wife? Ruan Wei are they stalking you? Tell them to leave,’ the first girl asked.

‘Who are these girls? Di Ruan Wei, you owe me an explanation,’ the third girl said.

‘They both said they are his girlfriends, but you said you’re his wife. Mr Di who should I believe?’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Girlfriends? We’re getting married next month but you’re dating other girls?’ the third girl asked.

Gu Jing’s ears ached from hearing the three girls fight with each other, but she didn’t know who they were.

Zhen Lang whispered in Gu Jing’s ear. ‘Are you full?’

Gu Jing nodded her head. Zhen Lang held her hand and he pulled her off her chair.

‘If you’re full then let’s go. A battle is about to start here,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Um, it’ll be a lively battle to watch,’ Gu Jing said.

‘We’ll go outside and watch the battle,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang held his curious sweetheart’s hand toward the front door. He turned around and he warned the third girl. ‘One of his girlfriends said she has

one child with him and his other girlfriend said she has two children with him. You should tell your fiancé it's bad to endanger the health of girls.'

Zhen Lang led Gu Jing outside.

Inside the restaurant a screaming match erupted, bowls and chopsticks fell onto the floor and Di Ruan Wei explained nonstop.

Outside the restaurant Gu Jing held her full stomach and she laughed uncontrollably until Zhen Lang dragged her to his car.

Zhen Lang opened the front passenger door for Gu Jing. She picked up a big rock and she sat inside his car.

'Did you plan it?' Gu Jing asked.

'Plan what? I'm not his girlfriend. What can I plan?' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang sat in the driver's seat.

Gu Jing scoffed. 'Other people don't know the real you, but I know the real you. Did you borrow his phone to call his girlfriends?'

Zhen Lang laughed. 'Lawyers interact with many different people so lawyers will list their phone numbers in different groups. I accidentally sent a text message to the people on his list personal phone numbers. In the text message I wrote I found this phone and I asked for the owner to come to the restaurant to collect the phone. I didn't expect many owners would come to the restaurant.'

'How did you know he's a player? He behaved like a gentleman and he didn't say anything offensive,' Gu Jing said.

'It's the look in his eyes. When a man looks at a woman there are different kinds of looks. It's clear to see if a man looks like he wants to play with a woman or if he is sincere about a woman,' Zhen Lang said.

'How can you judge a man you don't know by the look in his eyes? What if you made the wrong assumptions?' Gu Jing asked.

'When he opened his wallet, I saw two condoms inside his wallet. If he didn't have a girlfriend, why would he carry condoms around?' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang helped Gu Jing put on her seatbelt.

Zhen Lang put on his seatbelt and he turned on the ignition.

Gu Jing checked her surroundings and she threw the big rock out the window. The big rock dented her third blind date's car.

'Hurry up and drive home,' Gu Jing said.

On the way home Gu Jing propped her hand on her chin and she contemplated for a while.

'Little girl, there are many men who take advantage of women. How often do good men go on arranged dates? There isn't anything good about being deceived by bad men. Will you stop going on arranged dates?' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing didn't object Zhen Lang's advice. Even if he didn't advise her to stop going on dates with strangers she didn't plan on going on anymore dates.

Gu Jing wondered if men were all players like her third blind date who had a fiance and cheated on his fiance with other girls. Then she wondered if men were all stingy and archaic like her first and second blind dates.

'Mr Vet, are you a virgin? You don't need to satisfy your manly urges? Or is it because you don't have manly urges?' Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang braked abruptly and Gu Jing almost kissed the windshield.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty

***Related***

# Twenty-One

## Chapter Twenty-One

Gu Jing and Peng Cheng Gui's studio specialised in commercial glamorous photos.

A few days ago Zhen Lang dropped off Gu Jing at the studio. She saw the new photo hung on the studio's front display window and she freaked.

In the new photo a young beautiful woman's hand covered half of her naked chest, her startled eyes matched the innocence of her snow white bare back and her short hair above her shoulders showed off her sensual slender neck.

Gu Jing jumped out of Zhen Lang's car and she charged into the studio.

'Peng-Cheng-Gui!' Gu Jing cried out.

Peng Cheng Gui heard Gu Jing's voice, she turned her head around and she saw the front glass door fell onto the floor.

'Hehe... our heroine is here,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

A group of women turned their heads around and they collectively gasped.

'Our photographer with three years of professional experience will take photos and her service fee will be ninety percent off fixed prices for one day only. Tomorrow prices will return to normal,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing ignored the two dozen eyes that stared at her and she pulled Peng Cheng Gui to a private room.

'What the hell are you doing? Why did you take advantage of me when I'm changing my clothes to take photos of me? You even printed out a half-naked photo of me and displayed it at the front window,' Gu Jing said.

Peng Cheng Gui shrugged her shoulders. 'I don't know. Perhaps you forgot to turn off the timer on your camera that day you left it on the makeup table and it captured photos of you. I accidentally came across the photos of you and I thought they were beautiful. Take a look, your photo proved to be good advertising and attracted many new clients.'

‘Take down my photo!’ Gu Jing said.

‘What do you know about marketing? The number of clients that came today is more than the combined clients in the last three days. If you let me hang the photo of you for another three days I’ll give you an extra three thousand Yuan,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

‘If you don’t take down my photo I’ll demolish the studio,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing’s eyes swept around the studio and it focused on Peng Cheng Gui’s new round glass table.

Peng Cheng Gui grabbed Gu Jing’s shirt collar and she held up five fingers. ‘Five thousand Yuan, three days. It’s only three days.’

‘If you don’t take down my photo, I’ll break your new table and I won’t compensate the broken table,’ Gu Jing said.

‘One day! Only one day,’ Peng Cheng Gui begged.

‘Do you think I don’t have a brain and I don’t know about how my cameras work? If you mess with me again, I’ll get even with you,’ Gu Jing said. She held up a bag of food. ‘If after I finish eating and you haven’t cleaned the studio properly then I’ll help you renovate the studio!’

Gu Jing carried her bag of food upstairs.

Peng Cheng Gui picked up a calculator and she mumbled to herself. ‘For every twenty clients the studio will profit at least six thousand Yuan. If Gu Jing isn’t going to let me hang up the photo of her then I can only resort to my second backup plan.’

Upstairs Gu Jing ate her breakfast and she didn’t hear Peng Cheng Gui’s mumbles.

A few days later inside Zhen Lang’s car, Gu Jing almost kissed the windshield.

‘Ah!’ Gu Jing cried out.

Gu Jing held her head.

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing’s shoulders. ‘Let me see.’

‘Mr Vet, do you know how to drive?’ Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang held up one finger in front of Gu Jing's face. 'How many fingers am I holding up?'

'What do you mean? Do you see me as a child?' Gu Jing asked.

'Answer my question, how many fingers am I holding up?' Zhen Lang asked.

'One,' Gu Jing said reluctantly.

Zhen Lang held up another finger. 'How many fingers am I holding up now?'

Gu Jing laughed. 'V, but I don't mind turning it into an S.'

Zhen Lang exhaled gently. 'Do you feel dizzy? Do you feel nauseous?'

'Um, I ate too much before. You suddenly braked, of course it'll be strange if I'm not nauseous,' Gu Jing said.

'This is what happens when you take off your seatbelt in the car,' Zhen Lang said. He put his palm on Gu Jing's forehead. 'I'll help you rub your forehead. Endure the pain.'

Zhen Lang's palm gently touched Gu Jing's forehead and she cried out. She held onto the passenger door handle.

'Don't hide,' Zhen Lang said. He leaned closer to Gu Jing. 'In the past you trained and received many injuries. Why can't you endure a little pain like this?'

'I'm not scared of pain. I'm scared you're using this as an opportunity to take revenge. Ah! Hey, be gentle,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing thought about the difference between a professional doctor and an unprofessional doctor. She decided an unprofessional doctor treated their patients roughly. Zhen Lang rubbed her forehead like he would rub a table.

Gu Jing sat back against her seat to avoid Zhen Lang whilst he leaned closer to her.

After a while Zhen Lang's body laid on top of Gu Jing's body. He continued to rub her forehead and she felt his hot breath on her face.

'Do you feel better?' Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang's face was above Gu Jing's face by ten centimetres. She looked up at his face and she felt something strange in her heart.



Zhen Lang's breath gently swept through Gu Jing's fringe. His eyes were darker and deeper than a pool of water. She could smell his familiar scent, but it also smelt a little strange to her.

Gu Jing recognised Zhen Lang's scent, but the little strangeness was caused by their closeness. She felt at a close distance his scent was easy on the nose.

Gu Jing sniffed Zhen Lang's face. 'Mr Vet, did you change deodorant?'

'What?' Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang rubbed Gu Jing's forehead gentler.

Gu Jing saw a strand of Zhen Lang's hair fell onto his forehead. She put her hand on his forehead and she swept the strand away from his forehead. 'Mr Vet, can you drive more carefully next time? Your driving skills are poor.'

Zhen Lang's face inched closer to Gu Jing's face and the distance between their faces was about three centimetres.

Zhen Lang smiled. 'What did you say before?'

Gu Jing tried to move her head back, but there was no space left behind her head. She didn't understand why she breathed heavily.

Gu Jing put a hand on Zhen Lang's chest and she pushed his body away from her body a bit. 'I said, do you know how to drive? Do you want me to teach you how to drive?'

Zhen Lang laughed. 'I didn't ask about driving. Before did you ask me if I'm a virgin?'

'I didn't! You misheard me,' Gu Jing denied.

'I misheard you?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing felt Zhen Lang's husky voice was easy on the ears. Suddenly she realised her breaths became even heavier.

'Get away from me. You're breathing in all the oxygen,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing aimed a fist at Zhen Lang's face, but his hand grabbed her fist. Her head fell back on the chair and she cried out.

Zhen Lang smiled and his free hand gently stroked the bruise on Gu Jing's

forehead.

Zhen Lang saw Gu Jing lift her leg, but his car was too compact and her knee almost connected with his pants zipper.

‘Be honest for a bit,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang pressed his palm on top of Gu Jing’s knee and he gently rubbed her knee.

Gu Jing felt Zhen Lang’s crotch pressed between her legs and she saw his eyes turned darker.

Suddenly Zhen Lang and Gu Jing heard someone knock thrice on a door of his car. They both looked outside the front passenger window. They saw a cop held up a sign on the front passenger window – ‘If you two want to do it then go home and do it. If you two feel the need to do it urgently then park closer to the curb. Thank you!’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty-One

***Related***

# Twenty-Two

## Chapter Twenty-Two

In the morning Peng Cheng Gui walked into the studio and she saw Gu Jing sat in front of the coffee table. On the coffee table were squashed hot buns and a spoon dug into a bowl of soup nonstop. Half of the bowl of soup splattered onto the coffee table.

‘Why are you a messy eater like a child? Are you done eating? If you are then I’m throwing away the food on the table,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

‘Um,’ Gu Jing said.

Peng Cheng Gui cleared the coffee table, but she noticed the untouched bowl of congee.

‘Oh? Are you sick? You didn’t touch the bowl of congee,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing held her spoon and she sat on the sofa dazed.

Peng Cheng Gui stood in front of Gu Jing. ‘What’s wrong? Why do you look lost? What happened?’

Gu Jing saw a shadow in front of her and it broke her daze. ‘Huh? Why are you standing too close to me?’

Peng Cheng Gui sat on the sofa next to Gu Jing. ‘Confess. Did you meet a good man on your blind date yesterday? Is that why you look like you lost your soul?’

‘Yesterday...’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing remembered the hot atmosphere in Zhen Lang’s car and she immediately wanted to stop thinking about him.

Gu Jing remembered Zhen Lang’s smile and he whispered shady words in her ear. She felt like his eyes absorbed her soul and she felt like his body wanted to challenge her body.

Gu Jing slammed the coffee table and she laid powerless on the sofa.

Gu Jing knew Zhen Lang’s eyes were seductive since high school, his eyes

seduced many young girls back in high school. In college his eyes seduced many young ladies. But yesterday when he smiled and whispered in her ear, she saw his seductive eyes and she forgot to resist. In that moment she thought his eyes were beautiful and she forgot about the preservation of her virginity.

Peng Cheng Gui held Gu Jing's shoulders and she shook Gu Jing's shoulders. 'Um. Hurry up and tell me about your blind date yesterday.'

'Yesterday...' Gu Jing said. She fisted her hands. 'I swear I'm never going on another blind date again!'

'Then today your acting strange isn't because of your blind date but because of someone else?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing stared at the ceiling and she thought about the question Zhen Lang asked her in his car.

Zhen Lang asked Gu Jing if she wanted to know if he was a virgin then why didn't she inspect his body herself. She wanted to ask him how she was supposed to inspect his body to see if he was a virgin. Then she thought perhaps he wanted to tell her what was between his legs was fake.

Peng Cheng Gui poked Gu Jing's forehead with a finger. 'Gu Jing, are you thinking about a man?'

Gu Jing thought perhaps Zhen Lang was a man so she didn't deny she was thinking about a man.

Peng Cheng Gui pinched Gu Jing's cheeks and she smiled. 'Little Jing, look at me. I want to see if you love him so you need to answer my questions honestly.'

Gu Jing looked into Peng Cheng Gui's eyes and she felt like she was under hypnotism.

'Firstly, when you think about him do you feel like your heart is full of sweetness and thinking about him makes you smile?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing shivered and she scoffed. 'Smile? More like cry.'

'Secondly, when you think about him do you think his smile is beautiful?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing swatted Peng Cheng Gui's fingers away from her face. 'Beautiful? As

if.'

'Thirdly, when you think about him does your heart melt?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

'Melt?' Gu Jing asked. She glared at Peng Cheng Gui. 'I think about killing him. Tell me, does that count as my heart melting?'

'Fourthly, when you think about him immediately you want him to appear in front of you and if you don't see him for a while you miss him?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing sat upright on the sofa and she slammed the coffee table. She glared at Peng Cheng Gui. 'I want him to never appear in front of me again. If he appears in front of me and I see him smiling then I will stomp on his smiling face to powder form.'

Peng Cheng Gui sighed. 'Oh! Are you telling me the man who took away your soul for the whole morning is Zhen Lang?'

Gu Jing leaned her back against the sofa.

Peng Cheng Gui held Gu Jing's shoulders. 'You finally toward him-'

'I finally don't need to hold back with him,' Gu Jing said. She jumped off the sofa. She held her waist and she cackled. 'Did you know I finally repaid what I owe him? From now on if he provokes me I don't need to hold back anymore.'

Peng Cheng Gui sighed and the excitement in her eyes disappeared. She turned her head away from Gu Jing, but her ears couldn't escape Gu Jing's cackle.

Peng Cheng Gui knew it was dangerous to be too hopeful otherwise she would be frustrated to death, and her future husband would be a pitiful young widower.

Gu Jing happily kicked and punched mid-air.

Peng Cheng Gui knocked on the coffee table. 'Wait! What did you say to me a while ago? Didn't you say you wanted to go on blind dates because you wanted bigger breasts?'

Gu Jing nodded her head. 'Um.' She looked down at her flat chest and she

sighed. 'If I'm not going to go on blind dates anymore then what am I going to do about my chest?'

'You actually went on blind dates because you wanted bigger breasts? After you have bigger breasts you want to flaunt your big breasts in front of Zhen Lang?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

'Um,' Gu Jing said.

'Are you certain a twenty-five year old woman's breasts will grow bigger?' Peng Cheng Gui asked. She scoffed. 'At your age unless you undergo plastic surgery for breast implants then your breasts won't be bigger.'

'Is that true?' Gu Jing asked.

'Of course! You're a woman living in the modern era and you went to college too. How is it possible you didn't know about human body growth and you didn't think about plastic surgery options?' Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing's hands swept down from her flat neck and passed her flat chest. 'So even if my breasts naturally grows a little bigger it won't be enough... and Zhen Lang will mock me for the rest of my life, right?'

Peng Cheng Gui sighed. 'Are you certain he will mock you?'

Gu Jing nodded her head and she gritted her teeth. 'Not only does he mock my flat chest, yesterday he also said I'm a virgin no one wants!'

Gu Jing thought about Zhen Lang's strange smile in his car for a whole night and day and she realised his strange smile meant he was mocking her that no one would want to marry her.

'Cheng Cheng, I've made a decision,' Gu Jing said. She looked out a window then she looked down at her flat chest. The sunlight shone through the window and through her flat chest. 'I want breast implants!'

Peng Cheng Gui fell onto the floor and her head hit the sofa. 'Why are you speaking crazy nonsense?'

'Cheng Cheng, each person has something they are determined to achieve. He always mocks my flat chest. I need to show him my chest won't be flat for the rest of my life,' Gu Jing said.

Peng Cheng Gui opened her mouth wide and she couldn't believe Gu Jing's words.

Peng Cheng Gui knew Gu Jing didn't honestly answer her questions before. But she wanted to ask Gu Jing a fifth question – 'Are you this crazy because Zhen Lang said something careless to you and you took it to heart?'

Peng Cheng Gui didn't ask her fifth question because she knew the real answer.

Peng Cheng Gui thought Gu Jing wasn't the only crazy person in the studio. Gu Jing's prince Zhen Lang who she used to think was a sane person, decided to appear in front of the crazy Gu Jing.

Peng Cheng Gui looked at the clock on the wall, it was ten in the morning. She turned her head around and she looked at Zhen Lang. 'You're here early. Don't you have anything to do at the hospital?'

Zhen Lang glanced at Gu Jing. She flew to him and she looked into his eyes. 'Don't assume I don't know what you're thinking. I won't give you an opportunity to mock me.'

Gu Jing fixed her fringe to cover the bruise on her forehead and she strode out of the studio.

Peng Cheng Gui watched Gu Jing left the studio then she looked at Zhen Lang and she smiled sweetly. 'Are you in a mood to talk about a business transaction?'

Outside the studio Gu Jing crazily searched for the best plastic surgery practice in the city and she booked a breast enhancement consultation with one of the best plastic surgeons in the city.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty-Two

***Related***

# Twenty-Three

## Chapter Twenty-Three

‘Miss, what kind of consultation are you here for?’ a receptionist asked.

‘I...’ Gu Jing said and she looked at her flat chest.

‘Oh. This plastic surgery practice is rated the best practice for breast enhancements in the country. Are you here for a breast enhancement consultation?’ the receptionist asked.

Gu Jing nodded her head.

‘Miss, rest assure all our patients after breast implants have said there are no scars on their chests. The plastic surgeons here will follow your requests. You can request anything like pear shaped breast implants, peach shaped breast implants and the cup size of your choice...’ the receptionist said. She smiled charmingly. ‘And you can also request to have breast implants like one of your favourite national or international idols.’

Gu Jing’s head spun.

‘If you like you can ask one of our plastic surgeons to give you trial bras for you to experience what it’ll be like with the breast implants you desire,’ the receptionist said.

Gu Jing looked at a pair of mountain breasts advertised in the plastic surgery practice’s catalogue and she thought about the day she would stand proud with big breasts in front of Zhen Lang.

Gu Jing nodded her head.

‘Miss, do you want to choose which of our plastic surgeons to see or do you want us to make a recommendation for you. If you choose your own then perhaps you will need to wait a while until the plastic surgeon is available,’ the receptionist said.

‘Can you choose for me the best plastic surgeon who is available to see me now?’ Gu Jing asked.



‘Please wait while I check which plastic surgeons are available,’ the receptionist said. She checked the plastic surgeons’ appointment listings. ‘Miss, you are lucky. Our best plastic surgeon’s patient postponed a plastic surgery today and he is available to see you. His office is the first office on the second floor on the left. Miss, do you need me to escort you to his office?’

Gu Jing shook her head and she walked upstairs to the second floor. She saw the plastic surgeon’s name displayed on the front door of the first office on the left – ‘Lin Tu Shen.’

Gu Jing felt the plastic surgeon’s name was familiar, but she couldn’t remember why before she stepped into his office.

Gu Jing’s first impression of the plastic surgery practice was it provided good service, the furnishings in the reception area and a plastic surgeon’s office were classy. The walls were a fresh shade of green and sunlight shone through the wide windows.

Gu Jing saw the plastic surgeon’s chair faced a window and the bright sunlight obstructed her vision of him.

Gu Jing didn’t expect plastic surgeons had the luxury to view the sceneries outside the window.

The plastic surgeon swung his chair around. Gu Jing’s eyes were blinded by a bright halo that surrounded the plastic surgeon’s white shirt.

Gu Jing thought about how people said doctors were like angels and in that moment she felt the same way. But her delusion disappeared the moment she saw the smile on the plastic surgeon’s face. She felt like his white shirt turned into a black shirt. The plastic surgeon wasn’t an angel!

Gu Jing fisted her hands. ‘Why are you here?’

Gu Jing felt like she was in a nightmare and that the heavens mocked her. But the person in front of her was scarier than a nightmare, he could appear in front of her anytime he wanted to. She silently begged the heavens – ‘Heavens send a lightning bolt to kill me in front of this person.’

‘I’m here for an initial consultation and to examine the patient,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘But... the name displayed on the door is Lin Tu Shen,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Is that so? Perhaps the nurse on duty is busy and the nurse forgot to change the name on the door,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing cursed the nurse! If the name on the door was Zhen or Lang she wouldn’t enter into an office of nightmares.

Gu Jing finally remembered Lin Tu Shen, he was the jinx’s lover boy who she threw over her shoulders years ago.

‘The owner of this ‘Beautiful Rose’ plastic surgery practice is one of my former professors,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing wisely stepped backward.

‘Why are you here?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing cursed herself for not stepping back fast enough, another three steps and she would be free of her nightmare.

‘This is a plastic surgery practice, but you-’ Zhen Lang said.

‘I’m looking for a toilet!’ Gu Jing lied.

Gu Jing took another step back and she unexpectedly bumped into the receptionist.

‘Miss, are you ok? You forgot a copy of your consultation form. I amended the name of your doctor to Doctor Zhen on your form,’ the receptionist said.

Gu Jing knew she was cornered because Zhen Lang heard what the receptionist said.

‘If you chose me then why do you want to leave? Are you suspicious my surgical skills?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing wanted to say to Zhen Lang she didn’t suspect his surgical skills, but she suspected his impartialness.

Gu Jing knew it would be futile to escape because he would appear in front of her anywhere she escaped to.

Gu Jing reluctantly turned around.

Zhen Lang closed the windows. 'Lock the door.'

Gu Jing was used to following Zhen Lang's orders at home so she carelessly locked the door.

After the door was locked Gu Jing's suspicions were confirmed, she heard a nurse mumbled outside the locked door – 'Huh? This morning I changed the name display for this office. Why is it still Doctor Lin? Is my head muddled today?'

Gu Jing turned around and the curtains were closed too. The bright room became dark and it felt like her back turned cold.

Gu Jing felt Zhen Lang's smile turned into a professional smile and the man who stood in front of her wasn't the man she lived with at home.

'Take off your shirt,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing almost choked to death.

Gu Jing looked at her baggy shirt. 'I... today I only wore one shirt.'

Gu Jing was sane, only someone who was insane would wear layers of clothes on a hot day. She was an active person and she hated humidity and heat the most.

'I know. Take off your shirt,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing heard Zhen Lang's indifferent tone of voice but she didn't put down her guard.

'What for?' Gu Jing asked.

Although Gu Jing and Zhen Lang were familiar with each other, but not to the point they could be naked in front of each other. She felt it wasn't fair if she was the only one who undressed.

'If you don't take off your shirt then how will I know where are the best places to position your breast implants? What did you think I wanted to do? I'm a doctor who takes my duty of care toward my patients seriously,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing saw Zhen Lang pull a drawer and he took out a pen marker. She thought he looked like a beauty queen pageant judge who wanted to use the

pen marker to score her body parts out of ten. She wondered if he would score each of her body parts a ten, nine, eight or lower.

‘Do I need to take off my shirt?’ Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing realised she made a big mistake the moment she stepped into Beautiful Rose.

‘Of course. Each patient’s body is different. Some patients have longer backs and some have shorter backs. Some patients have wider shoulders so they are more suitable for bigger breast implants. Understand?’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing only understood she didn’t want Zhen Lang to see her naked body.

Gu Jing slowly put one arm through her shirt collar than she put her other arm through her shirt collar. It didn’t feel like she was taking off her shirt, it felt like she was ripping off her skin.

Zhen Lang silently waited for Gu Jing to take off her shirt and two of his fingers rubbed his nose. She thought his expression stayed indifferent whilst she took off her shirt. It was just the two of them in the room and she heard both of their breathing.

Gu Jing slowly lifted her shirt hem, her waist and stomach were exposed. Suddenly she pulled her shirt hem down to cover her waist and stomach. ‘I want to change doctors!’

Gu Jing couldn’t separate the professional Zhen Lang from the personal Zhen Lang she knew. She couldn’t take off her shirt in front of him.

Gu Jing put her arms back into her shirt sleeves. She turned around, walked to the door and her hand held the door knob.

‘If you’re too scared to take off your shirt in front of me then how can you take off your shirt in front of someone else?’ Zhen Lang asked.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty-Three

***Related***

# Twenty-Four

## Chapter Twenty-Four

Gu Jing let go of the doorknob. 'I'll request for a female doctor. If there are no female doctors here then I'll go somewhere else.'

Zhen Lang opened the curtains and Gu Jing shielded her eyes from the bright sunlight.

'A female doctor will still need to touch your body. You don't like strangers touching you. Will you feel comfortable having a stranger's hands touching your body, even if the stranger is a doctor?' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing didn't want to admit Zhen Lang was right. She needed to trust someone before they could invade her personal space.

Gu Jing didn't know why but she didn't like strangers being too close to her, if they were too close then she would push them away. She preferred Zhen Lang drive her to places than taking public transport. She kept her tiny haphephobia a secret, but unexpectedly Zhen Lang knew her secret.

'I... can endure it,' Gu Jing denied.

'Is that a compromise you can make? If it is then I want to explain in detail the risks of breasts enhancement, because we live together I won't be sugar coating the risks,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing sat in front of Zhen Lang's desk. 'Ok, explain the risks to me.'

Zhen Lang opened a drawer and he took out copies of failed plastic surgery reports. He gave them to Gu Jing.

'Despite most breast enhancements are considered minor surgeries, there are still risks and accidents can happen after a surgery. Like a car accident-' Zhen Lang said.

'What can happen?' Gu Jing asked.

'One breast implant can stay intact and the other breast implant can rupture. You can end up with an A cup and a D cup-' Zhen Lang said.

‘Then how will I walk? Don’t tell me I’ll be waddling,’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang shrugged his shoulders. ‘Perhaps.’

‘But you can take the breast implants out,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Perhaps. But you’ll need to have both breast implants taken out and put in two new breast implants. Think about it, if your skin needs to be stretched and stitched many times... you can picture what your chest will look like,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Like a deflated balloon,’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang nodded his head like he praised her for her intelligence.

‘And...’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang pinched Gu Jing’s cheeks for a while. She pushed his hands away from her face, but their faces were still close together enough for her to feel his breath on her face.

‘Each patient’s skin is different. Some patients’ skin will heal after a surgery but others will need a second surgery because of allergic reactions. With your tender skin you’ll likely have permanent scars after a surgery and you’ll be wearing thick clothes,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing frowned, she hated humidity and heat so if she had to wear thick clothes it would be a nightmare for her.

‘I recommend you have a rethink about having breast enhancements. Sometimes patients want to take breast implants out after a surgery. But if the patient’s body didn’t heal sufficiently after their first surgery then it’s unlikely the patient can have a second surgery,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang took out photos from a drawer. ‘These are photocopies of failed breast enhancement surgeries. You can take them home and look over them carefully.’

Gu Jing glanced once at the gruesome photos. She saw bruises, blood and scars like the patients were in a car accident. It made her nauseous.

‘All these photos are of real patients. Plastic surgeons can make the physical scars fade a little, but they can’t heal the emotional scars patients have after a

failed surgery,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing coughed. Her mind split into two camps, one for breast implants and the other for no breast implants. Her eyes stared at the paper on Zhen Lang's desk and she felt like the paper spun and turned into a paper aeroplane.

Gu Jing's gloomy eyes brightened. She lifted her head and she looked into Zhen Lang's eyes. 'Are you doing this on purpose?'

Zhen Lang tidied his desk but Gu Jing's question startled him. 'What?'

'It's nothing. I made a decision. I want breast implants. Beautiful Rose plastic surgeons performed more than a thousand surgeries, of course there will be some failed surgeries. But I don't believe I'll be one of the some failed surgeries. I'm certain I want breast implants. If you don't want to perform my surgery then I'll find a different doctor,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing stood. 'Do you need me to take off my shirt?' She lifted her shirt hem above her stomach. 'Come here and examine my body.'

Zhen Lang stood in front of Gu Jing. He held her hands and he pulled her shirt down. 'Wait.'

'What is it?' Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing looked down and she saw Zhen Lang's hands gripped her waist. She felt his hot long fingers through her thin shirt.

'Tell me what size you want your breast implants to be?' Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang pulled Gu Jing down onto her chair and she understood he agreed to be her surgeon.

Gu Jing put her hands a small distance in front of her breasts. 'I want them this big.'

'Two pears?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing extended her hands a little further away from her breasts. 'This big.'

'Two cantaloupes?' Zhen Lang asked and he smiled.

Gu Jing thought his smile mocked her. She extended her hands a lot further away from her breasts. 'This big!'

Zhen Lang nodded his head. 'Two watermelons.'

'Um,' Gu Jing said.

'Ok,' Zhen Lang said. He held Gu Jing's hand and he led her outside. 'Let's go.'

'Huh? What?' Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang stopped walking, he turned around and Gu Jing almost collided into his chest.

Zhen Lang lifted Gu Jing's chin and he smiled. 'I'm taking you somewhere to help you adjust to your future body.'

Gu Jing didn't know what Zhen Lang meant, but he dragged her to his car. He drove her to the supermarkets and he dragged her to the fruit section.

'What do you want to do?' Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang bought four watermelons and he bought four large calico bags. He wrapped an arm around Gu Jing's shoulder and he held the bags of watermelons in his other hand.

'Let's go home,' Zhen Lang said.

Outside the supermarkets Zhen Lang tied two calico bag straps together. He put a watermelon in each bag. He waved a finger and Gu Jing stepped closer to him.

'What is it?' Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang spread Gu Jing's arms horizontally and he put each of her arm through an untied calico strap. He moved the straps onto her shoulders and close to her neck.

'Ow!' Gu Jing cried out.

Gu Jing put her arms down and she saw a calico bag of watermelon suspended in front of each of her breasts.

Zhen Lang wrapped an arm around Gu Jing and he whispered in her ear. 'Didn't you want breast implants this big? You need to adjust to your new body first otherwise after the surgery you'll feel uncomfortable. If you request me to give back your old body after the surgery, it'll be impossible for me to give back



your old body.'

Gu Jing didn't want to admit that watermelon breasts were uncomfortable. She straightened her back and she ignored Zhen Lang's smile.

Gu Jing waddled a short distance toward Zhen Lang's car, but she felt breathless.

'Hey Mr Vet, wait for me,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang stopped ten steps in front of Gu Jing. In the past she never had trouble keeping up with his pace, but with watermelon breasts his steps were a lot wider than her steps.

Gu Jing waddled another two steps and she stopped to regain her breath, because the watermelon breasts hit hard against her chest.

Gu Jing straightened her back and she took two deep breaths. She saw Zhen Lang arrived at his car with a smile on his face.

Gu Jing waddled to Zhen Lang's car. She braced her hands against his car and she breathed heavily.

'Lift your head and straighten your back. Women with big breasts don't hunch their backs to look like a turtle shell,' Zhen Lang said.

On the way home Gu Jing's watermelon breasts hit against her chest nonstop and she had trouble breathing.

Gu Jing held her watermelon breasts and she felt more comfortable.

'In the future are you going to carry your breasts while you walk?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing reluctantly let go of her watermelon breasts and they fell onto her lap. Her neck and back ached.

Zhen Lang parked his car. 'Let's go upstairs.'

Gu Jing's legs trembled but she walked outside Zhen Lang's car toward the elevator.

The short distance toward the elevator felt like torture for Gu Jing. Near the elevator she rested her sore back against a wall and she couldn't wait to get

home.

The elevator doors opened.

‘Your shoe slipped off your feet,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing looked down but her watermelon breasts obstructed her vision of her feet.

Gu Jing looked down in vain for a while and the elevator doors were closing. Zhen Lang stood inside the elevator.

‘Wait!’ Gu Jing cried out. She waddled fast enough to stop the elevator doors from closing, but her left foot tripped over her right foot.

Gu Jing used all her energy left to leap into the elevator, she braced her hands on the back wall and she didn’t fall on her face. She mumbled to herself. ‘At least I didn’t embarrass myself by falling on my face.’

Gu Jing heard crack sounds and she felt something wet against her chest. She looked down and red watermelon juice leaked through the calico bags.

Gu Jing turned around. ‘Mr Vet, have you ever taken out watermelon breasts in this way?’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty-Four

***Related***

# Twenty-Five

## Chapter Twenty-Five

Gu Jing mourned her leaked watermelons on the coffee table.

Gu Jing rubbed her sore little buns on her chest. She worried her flat chest became flatter.

‘What’s wrong, does it hurt?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing glared at Zhen Lang who mocked her pain with a smile. She backed away from the jinx but her head bumped into a wall. She cried out, squatted and held her head.

‘What happened?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang carried Gu Jing to the sofa and he rubbed her head. She realised if her day started out unlucky then she would be unlucky for the whole day.

Since Gu Jing ran into the jinx in the morning, her whole day turned into turmoil. Her neck, back and head ached.

Gu Jing sat on Zhen Lang’s lap and her back rested on his chest. He wrapped an arm around her waist and he rubbed her head with his other hand. ‘Your head strength has declined.’

‘Huh?’ Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing turned her head around to face Zhen Lang and her head spun.

Zhen Lang laughed and Gu Jing felt his laughter vibrated through her back from his chest.

‘My wall didn’t break,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing scoffed. ‘It’s your fault for putting your face too close to me before.’

‘I called you several times but you didn’t hear me,’ Zhen Lang said. He gently rubbed Gu Jing’s back. ‘You didn’t eat lunch so I made you quail meat and egg soup. I asked you if you wanted to eat.’

‘Um,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing's soul revived after the mention of food.

Gu Jing lifted her head to look for the soup in the four directions. Then she realised she sat on Zhen Lang's lap, his hand rubbed her back and their faces were only two inches apart.

Gu Jing sniffed the after shave lotion on Zhen Lang's face and the body lotion he used in the shower. Her eyes travelled from his chest to his neck, chin and soft lips but her eyes lingered on his neck. She wanted to bite his neck.

Zhen Lang hit Gu Jing's bottom. 'If you want to eat, first you need to shower. You ran around the whole day, you stink to death.'

Gu Jing couldn't believe she sat on Zhen Lang's lap for that long. She cursed on the inside – 'Heavens, knock my head unconscious!'

Gu Jing shook her head to get rid of her desire to bite Zhen Lang's head but it only made her dizzy.

Gu Jing got off Zhen Lang's lap, she grabbed a large chunk of watermelon from the coffee table and she flew to the bathroom.

'Little girl, why are you taking watermelon into the bathroom?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing poked her head outside the bathroom door. 'You instructed me that breasts can't leave my chest and my chest can't leave behind my breasts. I'm cleaning my breasts inside the bathroom.'

Gu Jing closed the bathroom door. She took off her clothes and she stood under the shower head. During her shower she couldn't stop herself from daydreaming about Zhen Lang's body. She blamed her crazy daydream on hunger.

Gu Jing patted her cheeks to forget about her daydream. Suddenly she saw a figure in front of the shower screen. 'What is it?'

Zhen Lang pointed at the watermelon next to Gu Jing's feet. 'Are you done washing your breasts?'

'Oh!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing picked up the chunk of watermelon. She opened the shower screen

enough to pass Zhen Lang the watermelon and he left the bathroom.

Gu Jing covered her embarrassed face with her hands and she sighed.

Gu Jing put on clothes and she wrapped a towel around her head. She walked to the living room and unexpectedly Zhen Lang didn't mock her. He patted the spot on the sofa next to him and he pointed at the bowl of soup on the coffee table.

Gu Jing sat next to Zhen Lang and she grabbed the bowl of soup.

'Hot!' Zhen Lang said.

'Ah!' Gu Jing cried out.

Zhen Lang shook his head. He took off the towel wrapped around Gu Jing's head and he dried her soft hair. 'Why are you so lost today?'

Gu Jing didn't know what made her so lost either.

Gu Jing grabbed a tissue from the coffee table and she wiped her mouth. She slurped two small sips of the soup broth.

'Mr Vet, are you playing me? The more I think about it the more I feel your instructions are wrong. You instructed me to run around with two watermelons, but I don't believe two breast implants are that heavy. Besides, breast implants are inserted inside the breasts so how can they swing back and forth against my chest?' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang stopped drying Gu Jing's hair. He draped the towel over a sofa arm and he coughed. 'The truth is the two watermelons weigh five kilograms together. I instructed you according to your request to have two watermelon breasts.'

Gu Jing turned her head to the side and she looked at Zhen Lang. 'Is it truly that heavy?'

Gu Jing thought about the two hateful watermelons and she felt her shoulders ached more.

Zhen Lang saw Gu Jing finished eating her soup and he patted his lap. 'Come here, I'll massage your shoulders.'

Gu Jing put her empty bowl of soup on the coffee table and she wiped her mouth. She crawled onto Zhen Lang's lap. She let his hands massage her shoulders, because she wanted to cast away her suspicions.

Gu Jing buried her head between Zhen Lang's neck and shoulder. She sniffed the familiar scent of his body and she rubbed her cheek against his neck. She berated her desire to bite his neck. She didn't know why she wanted to bite his neck even though she ate a whole bowl of soup so she reasoned she was still hungry.

Gu Jing grabbed the chunk of watermelon on the coffee table. She broke it half and she bit off a big piece of watermelon to satisfy her hunger.

'What did you say about breasts can't swing back and forth? Think about it, when you're older your breasts will sag. I only wanted you to experience what your new body will be like when you're older,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang massaged Gu Jing's shoulder to the point she felt like she floated on top of clouds.

'Also if you want big breasts in the future you'll feel uncomfortable if you run fast. You can't do other recreational activities like Judo either. If someone throws you over their shoulder, you'll feel uncomfortable when they grab your collar and touch you inappropriately... and usually you wear a thin shirt under a thin jacket and you run around outside but no one else knows you're not wearing a bra underneath. If you have big breasts you'll need to wear a bra, but you hate humidity and you'll attract perverts too,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing frowned, not about breast implants but because she couldn't believe her suspicions were wrong about her hunger.

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing's face close to his face. 'Little girl, you don't need big breasts. You're good the way you are.'

'It's your fault. You were the one that said... you said-' Gu Jing said.

'What did I say?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing bit another big piece of watermelon and she spoke softly. 'Don't men all like big breasts? I don't know what I ate in the past but now my chest is flat. I don't want someone to say my flat chest is a runway.'

Zhen Lang stroked Gu Jing's hair. 'Not all men like big breasts.'

'What about you?' Gu Jing asked. She swallowed the watermelon down her throat and she glared at Zhen Lang. 'Do you like big or small?'

'Me?' Zhen Lang asked. He laughed. 'I like men.'

Gu Jing laughed. 'You're still holding onto an old grudge? Don't think during college I didn't know how sought after you were.'

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing's face and he inched his face closer to her face. 'Is it sweet?'

Gu Jing put a hand on Zhen Lang's chest and she pushed him away from her a bit. 'I put the other half on the table, you can eat that half.'

'I can't eat it all. Give me a piece to taste,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing looked down at her half and she saw only watermelon rind. She wiggled her bottom and she stretched her arm to grab the other half on the coffee table for Zhen Lang.

Zhen Lang gripped Gu Jing's waist and he pulled her upper body against his chest. She didn't know what happened so she turned her head around... his lips kissed her lips.

Gu Jing didn't expect Zhen Lang would kiss her roughly, because in her daydreams he kissed her softly. She felt his hot tongue licked her teeth. His tongue parted her two rows of teeth and his tongue wrestled her tongue.

Gu Jing felt a strange sensation in her heart. Zhen Lang's kiss overpowered her senses and she felt breathless. But she didn't resist, she let him pull her into the trance he weaved.

Zhen Lang gripped Gu Jing's neck and he kissed her harder. She felt light headed so she pulled her lips away from his lips and she gasped.

Zhen Lang didn't know how long he kissed Gu Jing. He reluctantly let go of her lips, but he couldn't resist to gently kiss the corners of her lips. 'It's sweet.'

Gu Jing's body sat still on Zhen Lang's lap and she held a watermelon rind in one hand but her soul floated on top of clouds.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty-Five

***Related***



# Twenty-Six

## Chapter Twenty-Six

‘You... why did you...’ Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang bit and licked Gu Jing’s swollen lips.

Zhen Lang let go of Gu Jing. Her lips were numb. She licked her lips a few times before she realised he bit her lips.

Gu Jing’s fingers rubbed her swollen lips and she gripped the watermelon rind with her other hand. She wanted to smash the watermelon rind into Zhen Lang’s face.

Zhen Lang licked his lips and he smiled. ‘What do you think it means?’

Gu Jing asked herself why Zhen Lang kissed her – ‘To provoke her? To mock her? To play her? Perhaps like the past he amused himself by confusing her?’

Gu Jing aimed the watermelon rind at Zhen Lang’s face.

‘What is it? Are you too scared to challenge me?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing realised Zhen Lang wanted mock her defeat. She tossed the watermelon rind on the coffee table.

‘Who said?’ Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing wrapped her arms around Zhen Lang’s neck and she bit his lips. She regretted she couldn’t bite off his beautiful lips.

Gu Jing wanted to curse Zhen Lang – ‘You dare look down on me?’

Gu Jing mimicked Zhen Lang’s kiss. Her tongue parted his two row of his teeth and her tongue wrestled his tongue. He groaned inside her mouth. He pulled her upper body closer to his chest and he caressed her neck.

Gu Jing felt the heat of Zhen Lang’s chest transferred to her chest and she felt his hot breath on her face. He didn’t counteract her attack and he let her bite his lips.

Gu Jing felt satisfied after she stole all of Zhen Lang’s oxygen. She let go of him

and she swept her fringe away from her eyes. 'Do you admit defeat?'

Zhen Lang stared at Gu Jing's swollen lips, he licked his lips and he smiled. 'I admit defeat.'

Gu Jing crawled off Zhen Lang's body. She shook her head but she still felt light headed. She escaped to her bedroom.

Gu Jing laid on her bed, but her dizzy head couldn't escape thoughts about Zhen Lang. Her thoughts were consumed by Zhen Lang's lips, his smile and his hands on her body.

Gu Jing fisted her hands and on the inside she cursed Zhen Lang – 'Why did you challenge me to a kiss? My first kiss is gone!'

Gu Jing shook her head. She saved her kiss for the man she would fall in love with. In her eyes Zhen Lang didn't count as a man so it wasn't her first kiss.

Gu Jing convinced herself to forget about the kiss, because she should be happy Zhen Lang admitted defeat. She rubbed her swollen lips and she dreamt a beautiful dream in her sleep.

Early in the morning Gu Jing carried a suitcase into the studio.

'Whoa! What happened to your lips?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

'Only a lip challenge,' Gu Jing said.

Peng Cheng Gui stared suspiciously at Gu Jing's swollen lips. 'Zhen Lang finally made a move?'

'No... a lip challenge not a one on one combat,' Gu Jing said.

'Oh... how do you feel?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing saw the studio's driver arrived and she gave the driver her suitcase. 'He's a wimp. After I bit him, he admitted defeat.'

'Bite...' Peng Cheng Gui said. She nearly tripped over her heels. She looked at the oblivious Gu Jing. 'Are you misunderstanding something?'

'Misunderstand what?' Gu Jing asked. She rubbed her face that didn't get enough sleep because she woke up early. She rushed to the studio to be on time for the studio's driver to drive her to the country to take photos for her client.

‘Since he and I were children we have bitten each other many times. It’s been a few years since the last time we bit each other.’

Peng Cheng Gui shook her head. ‘What did Zhen Lang say?’

‘Say what?’ Gu Jing asked. She looked for breakfast in four directions. ‘When I came to the studio he’s still asleep. I don’t know what he wants to say.’

‘Oh... you mean yesterday you and Zhen Lang bit each other and this morning you packed your bags and ran away?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

‘I’m not running away!’ Gu Jing denied. She grabbed a bottle of soy milk and she drank a big sip. ‘Don’t tell me that you forgot I’m taking photos in a country location today.’

Of course Peng Cheng Gui remembered about Gu Jing’s scheduled country location shoot, but she knew Gu Jing didn’t tell Zhen Lang. She sighed, grabbed a straw and drank a sip of Gu Jing’s bottle of soy milk.

‘Don’t forget after I’m done taking photos today you promised I can take a month leave and visit my parents’ home. You need to schedule my new appointments for after a month from today,’ Gu Jing said.

Peng Cheng Gui smiled sweetly. ‘I know.’

Gu Jing ate her breakfast and the studio’s driver drove her to the scheduled country location.

The moment Peng Cheng Gui waved bye to Gu Jing and the studio’s driver, she heard tyre skid sounds of another car.

Peng Cheng Gui turned around and she looked at the car’s driver strode toward the studio. She smiled because the car’s driver looked sleepy, his sleeves of his wrinkled shirt were rolled up and he didn’t brush his hair.

‘Big brother, it’s only seven in the morning. You don’t start work until later. Did you come here to eat breakfast with me?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked sarcastically.

Zhen Lang heard the sarcasm in Peng Cheng Gui’s voice the moment she called him ‘big brother’ because she, Gu Jing and himself graduated high school the same year.

Zhen Lang didn’t want to waste his breath talking nonsense with Peng Cheng

Gui. He walked into the studio and he scanned the studio for Gu Jing.

Peng Cheng Gui walked into the studio and she smiled because it was a valuable once in a thousand year opportunity for her to see the almighty Zhen Lang in a panicked state.

‘You can stop looking, she’s not here. Big brother, what do you want to eat for breakfast? My treat,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

‘Where is she?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Peng Cheng Gui shrugged her shoulders. ‘I don’t know. When I arrived here I didn’t see her.’

Zhen Lang took a deep breath and his whole body tensed.

Zhen Lang thought last night Gu Jing acted like her usual self. He saw the look of triumph in her eyes before she slept in her bedroom. But he woke up in the morning and he didn’t see her in her bedroom. He saw half of her clothes inside her cupboard were missing and her toiletries in the bathroom were missing too.

Zhen Lang didn’t expect Gu Jing to disappear without a trace and for the first time he felt scared.

Zhen Lang took another deep breath. He glanced at the studio’s sign outside. ‘Your studio sign outside hasn’t been changed for three years. You can order a new studio sign and send the invoice to me.’

Phuong Cheng Gui smiled sweetly. ‘Thank you big brother. Today she’s in a bad mood so I let her to go on a country location shoot. But after the shoot, she requested a month leave and I don’t know where she’s going on her leave.’

Zhen Lang scoffed. ‘What else needs renovating at the studio?’

Peng Cheng Gui pointed at a neighbouring business. ‘Recently the studio’s business has been flourishing. I want to expand the studio but I heard a rumour someone else offered a high bid to buy out the business next door. Big brother, can you think of a solution for me?’

Zhen Lang nodded his head and he put out a hand in front of Peng Cheng Gui. ‘Give me her address.’

Peng Cheng Gui quickly wrote down Gu Jing’s country location shoot on a note

and she gave it to Zhen Lang. 'Big brother, don't worry. I promise I won't tell anyone you have her address.'

Zhen Lang strode to his car and he smiled brighter than the studio's golden sign.

At a country location Gu Jing diligently setup her camera on a big boat that floated above a lake whilst a stylist retouched a young model's makeup. Her client wanted an ancient dynasty period theme photoshoot, which was why the model wore an ancient dress costume and the client rented a big boat and a small vintage boat.

The stylist stood behind Gu Jing and the model looked shyly at Gu Jing's camera lens.

'Not bad. Good pose,' Gu Jing praised.

Gu Jing was satisfied the photos she took captured the model and the beautiful landscape.

'Can you take photos of me on the small boat?' the model asked.

Gu Jing glanced at the small boat next to the big boat and she saw the back of the boat helmsman. She worried four people on the small boat would capsize the small boat. But she looked at the sun almost setting and she didn't want to waste a beautiful sunset.

Gu Jing nodded her head. 'Ok, you two need to be careful. I'll go on the small boat first then I'll help you two get on the small boat.'

Gu Jing carefully stepped onto the small boat, but the helmsman turned around and startled her. 'Why are you here?'

'A coincidental meeting,' Zhen Lang said.

'Coincidence my ass,' Gu Jing cursed.

Gu Jing escaped one hundred kilometres away from the jinx but he still appeared in front of her, only a fool would believe the jinx's 'coincidental meeting' excuse.

Gu Jing didn't want to waste the beautiful sunset. 'Get off the small boat.'

Zhen Lang gripped Gu Jing's waist and he whispered in her ear. 'We live together and last night we kissed. Why are you this fierce with me?'

Gu Jing heard her client's crew laughed on the big boat behind her and Zhen Lang and she knew everyone heard Zhen Lang's loud whisper. She felt one hundred percent certain Zhen Lang followed her to trouble her.

Gu Jing put up a fist in front of Zhen Lang's face. 'If you don't get off the small boat, I'll throw you into the lake.'

'According to the principle of yuanfen, it takes ten years of meditation to bring two people together to ride in the same boat. We have twenty-five years of fate, there is nothing wrong with us riding in the same boat,' Zhen Lang said. He hugged Gu Jing tighter. 'After you're done taking photos let's go home together, ok?'

Zhen Lang knew Peng Cheng Gui didn't tell him Gu Jing didn't run away from him the moment he saw Gu Jing took photos on the lake. But he decided he didn't want to wait anymore.

'Can we date?' Zhen Lang asked.

'If I have to see you every ten years, I rather drown!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing didn't hear what Zhen Lang said because she worried about wasting a sunset so she only wanted him to get off the small boat.

Gu Jing pushed Zhen Lang's chest and the boat rocked. She lost her balance but he gripped her waist. She glared at him, she pushed him away and she fell into the lake.

Whilst Gu Jing treaded water she didn't expect to be the local country newspaper headline lead the following morning – 'A young man confessed his love to another man, but the man rejected the young man and the heartbroken young man jumped into a lake.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty-Six

***Related***

# Twenty-Seven

## Chapter Twenty-Seven

‘You’re a jinx! I can swim to land myself!’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang jumped into the lake and he dragged Gu Jing onto land. But under the lake he touched her body inappropriately, she pushed him away from her and as a result she swallowed a lot of water.

‘Don’t make a commotion, get into my car,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘I’m not getting into a jinx’s car!’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing couldn’t see the studio’s car, because a crowd obstructed her pathway.

‘You’re a young man. You need to value your life,’ a man said.

‘That’s right, your life is precious,’ a lady said.

‘The youth of today are too hot headed. You have a long road ahead of you,’ an elderly lady said.

Zhen Lang saw Gu Jing shivered, he took off his jacket and he draped it over her shoulders.

‘Please move out of the way,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Don’t kill yourself,’ an elderly man said.

‘Don’t think too much, it’s better to value your life,’ another lady said.

Zhen Lang wrapped an arm around Gu Jing and his eyes swept coldly over the crowd. ‘Move out of the way.’

The crowd immediately parted and Gu Jing leapt to the studio’s car.

‘Jinx, keep your distance from me,’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang opened the studio’s car door for Gu Jing and he drove in his car to the resort.

The studio’s car driver drove Gu Jing to the resort, but half-way the engine

made a boom noise and the car broke down.

‘There is something wrong with the engine. Miss Gu, do you want to wait for me to fix the engine or do you want to go in a different car?’ the driver asked.

Zhen Lang wound down his car window, he smiled and he waved Gu Jing to get in his car.

Gu Jing reluctantly got in Zhen Lang’s car. Because they were both drenched and dirtied his car, she let go of the lake incident.

Zhen Lang drove Gu Jing to the resort. The moment they arrived at the resort she jumped out of his car. She didn’t wait for him to park his car, she strode into the resort.

A concierge served Gu Jing at reception.

‘Room 501,’ Gu Jing said.

The concierge gave Gu Jing a key card to her room. She ran to the elevator because she didn’t want to run into the jinx.

Gu Jing walked out of the elevator and she swiped her key card several times but the front door didn’t open. She checked her key card and she cursed – ‘Heavens! 510?’

Gu Jing rushed back to reception and she couldn’t believe she ran into the jinx at reception. She ignored him and she quickly exchanged key card 510 for 501. She strode to the elevator, but the jinx followed her to the fifth floor.

‘Why are you following me?’ Gu Jing asked. She glared at Zhen Lang, his clothes were still wet. ‘I’ll let you take a shower in my room, but I’m showering first.’

Zhen Lang dangled his key card in front of Gu Jing’s face and her face boiled, because he had key card 503!

Gu Jing couldn’t believe out of all the rooms at the resort, the jinx’s room had to be on the same floor as her and right next to her room!

Gu Jing escaped to her room and she ran to the bathroom. She turned on the shower faucet and she cursed – ‘Heavens! Cold water?’



Gu Jing called reception, but no one picked up. She reluctantly knocked on the jinx's front door.

Zhen Lang opened the front door and he saw Gu Jing's wet clothes still stuck on her body. He held her hand and he pulled her into his room. 'Why didn't you shower and change clothes?'

Gu Jing looked pitifully at Zhen Lang. He showered and looked refreshed. But she wore wet clothes and stunk of overdue milk.

'There's no hot water in my bathroom,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang pushed Gu Jing in the direction of his bathroom. 'Take a shower in my bathroom first. I'll call maintenance to fix your bathroom.'

Gu Jing showered in Zhen Lang's bathroom. She finally felt refreshed. She walked back to her room and she crawled into bed. She wanted to sleep until morning, but she woke up in the middle of night cold. She sneezed, sniffed her nose and her body shook.

Gu Jing got out of bed. She checked the air-conditioner control system, and the green light looked like a glow in the dark nightmare. She clearly set the room temperature at 22 degrees Celsius, but the green light glowed 18 degrees Celsius.

Gu Jing shivered all the way to Zhen Lang's front door.

'Mr Vet, open the door,' Gu Jing said weakly.

Zhen Lang opened his front door and Gu Jing collapsed onto his chest. He hugged her, her body felt hot and he frowned. 'Why is your body hot?'

Gu Jing didn't understand why Zhen Lang asked her why her body felt hot, because she shivered uncontrollably. She rubbed her cold body against his warm body.

'The air-con in my room is broken. Can you call maintenance for me?' Gu Jing said. She hugged Zhen Lang. 'You're a jinx. You made me fall into the lake, made my car break down, my shower and my air-con doesn't work because of you. Wait until I wake up, I'll get even with you.'

Zhen Lang carried Gu Jing onto his bed. 'Stop speaking nonsense.'

Zhen Lang checked his suitcase. He took out a thermometer, fever relief tablets and a bottle of water.

‘Mr Vet...’ Gu Jing called. She held her head. ‘My head hurts, my bones ache. Did you hit me while I’m sleeping?’

Zhen Lang checked her temperature. He frowned, she had a fever. He got her to sit upright. ‘Open your mouth. Swallow the tablets and drink water. It’ll reduce your fever.’

Gu Jing swallowed the tablets and drank a sip of water. In her feverish state she hugged a giant pillow. She snuggled her pillow and she moved her head around until she found a comfortable spot.

‘Little girl, are you comfortable?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing didn’t expect her pillow could talk, but her pillow was warm and comfortable so she didn’t let go of her pillow.

Gu Jing pulled Zhen Lang onto the bed. He hugged her and he caressed her face. He was relieved her fever reduced. He whispered in her ear. ‘If you keep putting your hand there, I’ll be uncomfortable all night. All these years, I rarely see you get sick. But you’re not a good patient.’

Gu Jing dreamt a beautiful dream. In her dream a giant hot water bottle hugged her and caressed her face. She felt happy and safe. She wanted the giant hot water bottle to hug her and keep her warm every day.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty-Seven

***Related***

# Twenty-Eight

## Chapter Twenty-Eight

Gu Jing dreamt of a banquet table. She drooled in her sleep, her stomach rumbled and her eyes stalked a giant roast duck on the banquet table.

Gu Jing cackled and she pounced on the duck. But the duck flapped its giant wings and it escaped her hands. The duck laughed like Zhen Lang.

‘Little girl, are you hungry? Do you want to eat?’ the duck asked.

Gu Jing didn’t know ducks could talk. But she wanted to eat the delicious duck. She felt the duck’s hateful laughter sounded like Zhen Lang’s laughter and its breath tickled her face.

The duck flew away from Gu Jing.

‘Don’t fly away!’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing’s hand captured the duck’s giant leg and she hugged the duck against her chest. She wanted to satisfy her hunger.

The duck groaned. Gu Jing cackled and she bit the duck’s delicious chest.

Gu Jing gripped the duck’s giant leg and the duck groaned louder. ‘Mine!’

‘It’s yours. Twenty-five years ago it belonged to you, and twenty-five years later it still belongs to you. But if you don’t let it go, in the future even if you want it, it’ll be gone,’ the duck said.

The duck sighed and the duck stopped flapping its giant wings.

Gu Jing didn’t understand what the duck meant by twenty-five years ago. Her legs wrapped around the duck’s body. The duck’s body felt hard and soft, and she didn’t want to let the duck go. Her whole body pinned the duck on the banquet table.

The duck’s warm giant wing caressed Gu Jing’s forehead. ‘Your fever muddled your head. Little girl, wake up and take your medicine.’

Gu Jing felt the duck’s voice sounded familiar like Zhen Lang the jinx.

Gu Jing opened her eyes, but the bright light hurt her eyes and she blinked several times. Her blurry vision cleared and she saw the duck's face turned into Zhen Lang's face!

Gu Jing's sleepiness disappeared. 'Why are you in my bed?'

Zhen Lang's face winced. He glanced down his body and he coughed. 'You're in my room, you're in my bed and you slept together with me.'

Gu Jing glanced down the bed, it didn't look like her bed.

Gu Jing's hazy memories flashed through her mind. Last night she knocked on Zhen Lang's door and she laid on his bed but she couldn't remember what happened after.

Gu Jing tried to move away from Zhen Lang, but she realised her legs were wrapped around Zhen Lang's legs. She laughed awkwardly and she pulled up the bedsheet to cover her embarrassed body.

'Little girl, your hand,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing lifted her left hand, and she didn't feel anything. She wanted to lift her right hand, but she realised her right hand gripped something hard. Although she was familiar with Zhen Lang's body, she didn't know what was in her right hand.

Gu Jing's head hurt and her stomach rumbled louder. She felt her reactions were slower than usual. Her right hand gripped the hard object and she tried to pull the hard object away from Zhen Lang's body.

Zhen Lang gripped Gu Jing's right wrist. 'Little girl, don't pull.'

Gu Jing's left hand patted Zhen Lang's body around her right hand, and she realised the hard object her right hand gripped was between Zhen Lang's legs.

Gu Jing took a deep breath and her hands let go of Zhen Lang's body. She wrapped herself around the bedsheet and she jumped off the bed.

Gu Jing forgot her dragon and phoenix strength temporarily separated from her body. In her weak body, she jumped off the bed and she fell on the floor. Luckily the bedsheet cushioned her fall.

Zhen Lang pulled Gu Jing back onto the bed. He laid on his side and he

caressed her face. 'You still have a fever, why are you jumping around?'

'I...' Gu Jing said and she looked everywhere except at Zhen Lang's face.

Zhen Lang retrieved his hand and he got off the bed. 'Don't jump around. I'll get your medicine and water for you.'

Gu Jing silently watched Zhen Lang got off the bed. She didn't want to admit his hand soothed her face and she didn't want him to leave the bed.

Gu Jing's eyes followed Zhen Lang's body movements. She saw him walked into the bathroom, she heard the sound of water running and she wished she could see through walls.

Gu Jing laid on the bed for a long time and she realised she was sick. For more than twenty-five years she didn't know what taking medicine meant. She thought perhaps she fell into the lake yesterday and it caused her cold. Her head flushed hot and cold like she had a forty degree Celsius fever.

Zhen Lang walked out of the bathroom in a bathrobe. He sat on the bed and he gently lifted Gu Jing's weak upper body. She sniffed his fresh body.

'Take your medicine and drink water,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang held the glass of water for Gu Jing. She swallowed the tablets and she drank water slowly. She felt like a cat that lost its claws and she had no choice but to be obedient.

Gu Jing saw Zhen Lang's loose bathrobe exposed his beautiful chest, but the familiar teeth marks on his chest startled her. She remembered in her dream she bit a giant roast duck's chest and it tasted delicious. She also remembered the duck's leg felt good in her right hand.

Zhen Lang saw Gu Jing stared at his chest. He pulled the collar of his bathrobe close together and he smiled. 'Did it taste delicious?'

Gu Jing nodded her head then she shook her head and her head spun.

'Little girl, are you hungry?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing nodded her head.

'Do you want to eat something?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing nodded her head.

‘I’ll go buy salty duck egg and minced pork congee for you, ok?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing nodded her head.

‘I’m giving you good service, will you marry me and let me give you good service for the rest of your life?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing nodded her head and she felt there was something strange about Zhen Lang’s question.

Gu Jing sat upright on the bed too quickly and her head spun fast.

‘Ah!’ Gu Jing cried out.

Gu Jing looked at Zhen Lang’s shiny eyes and she felt like she was in a dream.

Gu Jing recited Zhen Lang’s questions in her head – ‘He asked me if I’m hungry. He asked if I want to eat something. He asked if I want to eat salty duck eggs and minced pork congee. What did he ask me afterward? Did he ask me if I want to marry him?’

Gu Jing felt choked. She stretched out her weak hand and she pinched Zhen Lang’s cheek. His cheek felt warm, and she realised it wasn’t a dream.

‘Mr Vet, am I hallucinating because I’m sick? Or are you deliriously sick?’ Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang pressed a cold wet towel on Gu Jing’s forehead. ‘You’re not hallucinating and I’m not deliriously sick. I’ll ask you the same questions again. Are you hungry?’

Gu Jing nodded her head.

‘Do you want to eat salty duck egg and minced pork congee?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing nodded her head.

‘Do you want me to buy it for you?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing nodded her head.

‘Do you want me to buy it for you for the rest of your life?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing nodded her head and she realised Zhen Lang's question felt strange again.

Zhen Lang kissed Gu Jing's lips. 'You promised to marry me so we're engaged. After you recover we'll go shopping together to buy you an engagement ring.'

The word 'engaged' echoed loudly in Gu Jing's head. 'Jinx, I can understand if you want to torture me to death to end our twenty-five year war. But we don't need to be engaged for you to torture me.'

Gu Jing didn't expect to be sick with a cold and fever for a whole day. She worried within ten days her soul would fly away from her body and her soul would be playing chess with Dizang.

'I'm going out to buy you congee. After you finish eating your congee, you need to take your medicine and rest,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang stroked Gu Jing's hair for a while. He sneakily kissed her lips again. He got off the bed, changed his clothes and he went out to buy her congee.

Gu Jing didn't see the triumphant smile disappear from Zhen Lang's face. She felt certain in the future he wanted to torture her to death, and he was happy because he caught her.

Gu Jing took out her phone and she dialled a lifeline. 'Cheng Cheng, save me!'

'What is it?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

'Zhen Lang... he... he wants to marry me,' Gu Jing said pitifully.

Gu Jing heard dead silence.

'Zhen Lang wants to marry you? Then you need to remember to say to him that he has to transfer all his assets to you including shares before you'll marry him. I'll help you value his assets,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

'Cheng Cheng! If I marry him I'll die,' Gu Jing said.

'Of course you'll die! You'll die rich!' Peng Cheng Gui said.

'Cheng Cheng!' Gu Jing said.

'Remember, if he doesn't transfer his assets to you then you can't marry him. At least ninety percent of his assets but eight percent is acceptable-' Peng Cheng

Gui said.

‘But... I think I promised to marry him already,’ Gu Jing said.

‘What? He didn’t transfer any of his assets to you and you promised to marry him already?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

‘Um,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Then you don’t need to live anymore. Even if you return to the studio alive, I’ll choke you myself,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty-Eight

***Related***



# Twenty-Nine

## Chapter Twenty-Nine

Zhen Lang bought congee for Gu Jing.

Zhen Lang sat on the bed next to Gu Jing. He read a newspaper and she ate congee.

Gu Jing glanced at the front page of the newspaper Zhen Lang read and she fumed. 'Who wrote this article? I'm a girl! Why did they write that I'm a boy?'

Gu Jing coughed and her hoarse voice sounded huskier than her usual voice.

Zhen Lang put his hand on Gu Jing's forehead, her fever returned. He turned the page and he folded the newspaper in half to hide the front page. 'If you keep talking then many people will think you're a boy.'

'It's your fault!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing fisted her left hand and she aimed it at Zhen Lang's face.

Zhen Lang caught Gu Jing's left hand when it was two inches from his face, and he gently put her left hand down. 'Patients shouldn't jump around. Take your medicine and rest.'

Zhen Lang came across many patients with fevers over forty degree Celsius. But Gu Jing was his first patient who had a forty degree Celsius fever yet she had enough energy to jump around.

Gu Jing ate the congee and she felt better except her voice sounded hoarse. 'I don't need to take medicine and rest. I feel better. I want to go find this newspaper's headquarters to even the score with the writer and editor.'

Zhen Lang smiled. 'You feel better? Then let's go shopping for your engagement ring. What diamond cut do you want?'

Gu Jing pretended to cough and she pulled the bed sheet over her body up to her neck. 'Ah! I have a headache and my bones ache.'

On the inside Gu Jing cursed Zhen Lang – 'You took advantage of me in the morning when I'm hungry and dizzy to trick me into promising to marry you!'

‘If your head and bones ache then rest,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang slid his hand inside Gu Jing’s shirt and he took out a thermometer under her arm. He looked at the thermometer and he was relieved her body temperature reduced a bit. He put the thermometer on a bedside table then he picked up the newspaper on his lap and he continued to read articles.

Gu Jing laid on the bed. She silently watched Zhen Lang who sat next to her. He flipped through the newspaper and occasionally his arm brushed her head. She felt like she was under a bird’s protective wing.

‘Mr Vet,’ Gu Jing called softly.

Zhen Lang put the newspaper on his lap. His hand caressed Gu Jing’s cheek. ‘Do you feel uncomfortable anywhere?’

Gu Jing shook her head. Zhen Lang retrieved his hand and she felt disappointed his hand left her cheek.

‘Why do you want to marry me?’ Gu Jing asked.

Even if Gu Jing didn’t eat pork, she knew pigs could run. She never got married before, but at least she knew two people needed to love each other deeply before they got married... but she wondered if she and Zhen Lang loved each other, because clearly they were enemies not lovers.

‘About... between a wife and husband if they want to live together they need to be compatible and take care of each other, right?’ Gu Jing asked softly.

‘Do you know how to cook?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing shook her head.

‘Do you know how to wash dishes?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing knew how to break dishes. She shook her head.

‘Do you know how to clean the house?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing knew how to sweep floors, but if she mopped floors she would break the mop in half. She shook her head.

‘Do you know how to wash clothes?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing nodded her head.

‘Do you know how to clean toilets?’

Gu Jing nodded her head.

‘Good!’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang lowered his face until only two centimetres separated his face and Gu Jing’s face. She felt his hot breath on her face.

‘I’ll cook, wash dishes and clean the house. But I don’t want to wash clothes and clean toilets. Can you see how compatible we are? We’re compatible to the point we can’t be any more compatible, right? Of course we can take care of each other,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing thought what Zhen Lang said sounded reasonable... but if he only expected his wife to wash clothes and clean toilets, she felt his expectations were too low. His expectations of his wife were extremely low compared to a parent’s expectations of a nanny. She realised his reasons to marry her didn’t add up.

Gu Jing pushed Zhen Lang’s chest. ‘Do you think I’m a fool? Tell the truth!’

‘Tell the truth?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang laid on top of Gu Jing’s body. He kissed her lips and he bit her lips. She tasted his lips and tongue.

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing’s waist and he looked straight into her eyes. She didn’t understand what the deep contemplative look in his eyes meant.

‘What reason do you think I want to marry you?’ Zhen Lang asked.

On the inside Gu Jing cursed Zhen Lang – ‘If I knew why you want to marry me then would I need to ask you? I can’t read your mind!’

‘Is it because you want me to be conveniently in front of you every day to torture me for you to be in a good mood?’ Gu Jing asked.

Apart from Zhen Lang being happy when he tortured her, she couldn’t think of another reason why he wanted to marry her.

Zhen Lang shook his head. He kissed Gu Jing.

‘I won’t torture you. I’ll love and dote on you unconditionally. Do you believe

me?’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing scoffed. Unless she had a monster head and she was insane then she wouldn’t believe him.

Zhen Lang laughed. ‘Because... people say a man’s daughter is his old lover in a previous lifetime. If in this lifetime I genuinely love you, in the next lifetime I can be your daddy.’

Gu Jing widened her eyes and mouth. She thought Zhen Lang’s reason to marry her was insane!

Gu Jing felt powerless to dispute Zhen Lang’s reason to marry her. She pulled the bedsheet over her head and she heard Zhen Lang’s laughter echoed in the room.

Gu Jing knew she couldn’t marry Zhen Lang. Although he wouldn’t torture her to death, but he would frustrate her to death.

Gu Jing lifted the bedsheet off her head and she saw Zhen Lang smiled at her.

Zhen Lang’s smile suffocated Gu Jing’s heart. She realised she feared his smiles, because if she saw his smile her heart would pound chaotically.

Suddenly Gu Jing remembered the four questions Peng Cheng Gui asked her about Zhen Lang – ‘Firstly, when you think about him do you feel like your heart is full of sweetness and thinking about him makes you smile? Secondly, when you think about him do you think his smile is beautiful? Thirdly, when you think about him does your heart melt? Fourthly, when you think about him immediately you want him to appear in front of you and if you don’t see him for a while you miss him?’

Gu Jing blamed her confused heart and mind on her cold and fever. Because she was sick she wanted someone beside her. Her heart and mind wasn’t confused because of Zhen Lang.

‘Mr Vet, I...’ Gu Jing said softly.

Zhen Lang touched Gu Jing’s forehead and he frowned. ‘What is it? Where do you feel uncomfortable?’

Of course Gu Jing felt uncomfortable! She felt Zhen Lang’s frown looked too

stunning and beautiful. She thought perhaps her cold and fever didn't affect her heart and mind in that way.

Zhen Lang hugged Gu Jing. 'Do you feel cold?'

Gu Jing didn't feel cold, she felt hot. Her cheeks burned and even if she closed her eyes Zhen Lang's smile, eyes, arms and legs appeared in her mind like a movie played in slow motion.

Zhen Lang worried Gu Jing had other symptoms, because she didn't answer his question. 'What is it? Where do you feel uncomfortable?'

'Mmm...' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing felt wanted to wrap her arms around Zhen Lang's body.

'Hungry?' Zhen Lang asked. He let go of Gu Jing. 'What do you want to eat?'

Gu Jing nodded her head. She remembered her teeth marks on Zhen Lang's chest. She swallowed her saliva, because his body looked appetizing. She realised her feverish state turned her into a cannibal.

'Then lay in bed and rest. I'll go buy you food,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang got off the bed and he changed clothes.

Gu Jing didn't blink and she watched Zhen Lang changed clothes. The longer she looked at his body the faster her heart pounded and the more breathless she felt.

After Zhen Lang left the room, Gu Jing took a deep breath and she quickly regained her senses.

Gu Jing jumped off the bed. She ran to her room, she put on a jacket, grabbed her suitcase and she ran away.

At the studio Peng Cheng Gui calculated the payments received for the day. Suddenly she saw a breathless Gu Jing who didn't dress properly charged through the front door.

'Cheng Cheng, I realise I love someone,' Gu Jing said.

Peng Cheng Gui dropped a calculator onto a table. 'You're finally sane!'

'But... the person I love is the jinx,' Gu Jing said.

‘I know,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing shook Peng Cheng Gui’s arm. ‘What do I do now? I don’t want to go home. I don’t want to face him.’

‘Why?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

‘I-’ Gu Jing said.

A stylist walked downstairs and she interrupted Gu Jing and Peng Cheng Gui’s conversation.

The stylist put a newspaper on the table in front of Gu Jing and Peng Cheng Gui. ‘Boss, something bad happened. Isn’t this the photo we hung up in front of the studio a while ago?’

Gu Jing looked at the photo printed on the newspaper advertisement. The advertised photo for lingerie was a photo shopped photo of a familiar young beautiful woman’s hand covered half of her naked chest, her eyes were blurred, her snow white bare back and her short hair above her shoulders showed off her sensual slender neck. Also a photo shopped arm and hand covered her underwear.

Gu Jing read the caption under the lingerie advertisement photo – ‘Absolute guarantee any woman who wears this lingerie will turn on her man.’

‘What is this?’ Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing clutched the newspaper. She couldn’t believe she left the studio for a day, one newspaper wrote a shady article about her and another newspaper dared to use her image to endorse a lingerie product without her permission. She wanted to explode!

Gu Jing gritted her teeth. ‘Cheng Cheng! This photo of me, apart from you who else has a copy of the original photo of me?’

‘Apart from me, only Zhen Lang has a copy of your original photo,’ Peng Cheng Gui said.

‘The jinx!’ Gu Jing yelled and the studio front glass door shattered like a withered flower.

At the Wang company’s headquarters a manager passed a newspaper to a

director. 'It's illegal for us to use a person's image to endorse a product without their consent. Won't our company be sued for this? Right now is a critical time if our company wants to do business with Wen Lang's company, our company can't afford a scandal.'

A lady looked coldly at the manager. 'It won't affect our company's business with Wen Lang's company. This is just a lingerie advertisement. Our company altered the person's image, so who can prove we used a person's image without their consent? Our company already consulted a law firm about it. Don't worry, if the person sues our company and our company loses in court the case will increase our company's publicity and sales.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty-Nine

***Related***

# Thirty

## Chapter Thirty

Zhen Lang rushed home.

Zhen Lang got out of an elevator and he saw his nosey neighbours from downstairs.

Zhen Lang smiled politely. 'Hello aunty Li, hello aunty Zhao and hello big sister Zhang.'

'Doctor Zhen, are you renovating your apartment?' Mrs Li asked.

On the inside Zhen Lang guessed what happened and he nodded his head. 'Yes aunty Li, I hired a renovation company. Did they come today?'

Mrs Li smiled politely. 'Um. Can you ask them not to make a racket while I'm eating dinner? Dust from my ceiling fell onto my bowl of rice. I thought there's an earthquake.'

'That's right. Did you find an inexperienced renovation company? My TV I hung on a wall nearly fell down,' Mrs Zhao said.

Zhen Lang apologised to his neighbours and they left.

Zhen Lang opened his front door and it looked like an earthquake renovated his home. All his chairs lost a leg and they were thrown into a corner. The TV hung on a living room wall was thrown onto the sofa. A line marking from the kitchen floor to the living room floor matched the thickness of the TV screen and he understood the TV needed to be replaced.

Zhen Lang weaved through the clutter on the floor toward Gu Jing's bedroom. He opened her bedroom door, as he expected her cupboards were bare.

Zhen Lang walked to his bedroom and he saw on his bedroom door a knife pinned a photo of his face on the door. The knife scratched out his eyes and it made a line mark across his neck.

Zhen Lang laughed and he opened his bedroom door. His renovated bedroom matched the renovated living room, dining room and kitchen.



Zhen Lang understood something big triggered Gu Jing's fury otherwise she wouldn't destroy his home. He felt she went easy on him because she destroyed his home but she didn't beat him into a pulp.

Zhen Lang saw a wrinkled newspaper on the floor. He picked it up and he saw an altered photo of Gu Jing was used to endorse lingerie and he fumed.

Gu Jing carried her suitcases to the studio. She felt everything at the studio looked beautiful after she moved out of Zhen Lang's home.

Gu Jing laid on a sofa and she thought about the photo shopped photo of her and she felt frustrated. But her fear of facing Zhen Lang frustrated her the most. She felt like a wimp who ran away after committing a crime even though it was Zhen Lang who wronged her.

Gu Jing cursed Zhen Lang – 'What engagement? What taking care of each other? You played me! You proposed to me as a distraction tactic while you use my photo to publicly ambush me.'

Gu Jing berated herself for putting her guard down. Zhen Lang didn't change, he always looked for her weaknesses and he exploited them since they were children.

Gu Jing slept on the sofa and she cursed Zhen Lang in her sleep.

In the morning Gu Jing brushed her teeth and washed her face. She strode outside the studio and she bumped into Peng Cheng Gui.

'Where are you going?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing waved a newspaper in her hand. 'I'm going to this newspaper's headquarters to even the score.'

Gu Jing didn't dare face Zhen Lang, but she didn't fear the company who owned the newspaper franchise which used her image without her consent.

At ten in the morning inside Wang Shao Huang's office, she laughed at Gu Jing's ridiculous claims. 'How are you going to prove this is a photo of you?'

Gu Jing sat on a chair opposite Wang Shao Huang and she propped her legs on Wang Shao Huang's desk.

Wang Shao Huang felt intimidated by Gu Jing's confident aura. Although she

spoke arrogantly, she didn't dare look straight into Gu Jing's eyes.

Wang Shao Huang felt humiliated at the studio by Gu Jing and Peng Cheng Gui. After her assistants investigated more about Gu Jing's background she felt happy Zhen Lang's lover wasn't a young man but a tomboy. She didn't see Gu Jing as a worthy rival, but she wanted to take revenge on Gu Jing and Peng Cheng Gui. So she stole a photo from their studio and photo shopped it for a lingerie advertisement.

Gu Jing stood and she towered over Wang Shao Huang's desk. She saw Wang Shao Huang's chair moved backward and she laughed coldly. 'I stored the original photo in my camera. You have an impressive big company, I don't want this photo incident to adversely affect your company.'

Wang Shao Huang put documents she received from her lawyers on her desk in front of Gu Jing. 'I consulted my lawyers already. I suggest you look over these documents before you do anything pointless.'

Gu Jing glanced at the stack of documents and Wang Shao Huang laughed triumphantly. 'It appears you don't know about a PS clause. I can easily find a model who resemble the person in the PS photo and dress the model in the same set of lingerie, no one will notice a difference...' She pointed at Gu Jing's flat chest. 'Are you certain if you sue my company you will win in court?'

Wang Shao Huang leaned her back against her chair. 'Who would believe an established and reputable company like Wang's company would steal an ordinary photo from an ordinary studio for a lingerie advertisement? Miss Gu, I suggest you go home. If you're determined to sue my company and lose in court, I'll sue you for defamation. It'll take your ordinary studio several years to pay the compensation.'

Gu Jing doubted she could win against a big company, but she stared at Wang Shao Huang's fake big breasts and the shape of Wang Shao Huang's breasts looked like the same bra photo shopped in her photo.

'This photo belongs to Wang's company. Miss Gu, I suggest you don't make any false accusations. I won't give you even one Yuan,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

Gu Jing understood Wang Shao Huang's threat. She knew Wang Shao Huang's company used her image illegally and she wouldn't receive compensation from

Wang Shao Huang's company.

'You... you did this on purpose!' Gu Jing said.

Wang Shao Huang's whole body shivered, because the anger in Gu Jing's tone of voice sounded like Gu Jing would attack her. 'If you dare injure me, I'll call the police and report you for assaulting me and you can spend time in jail.'

Gu Jing glared at Wang Shao Huang and she laughed coldly.

Wang Shao Huang's shaky hands pushed Gu Jing outside her office. She ordered her employees. 'Call... call security.'

A crowd surrounded Wang Shao Huang and Gu Jing.

Wang Shao Huang pointed a finger at Gu Jing. 'She claims she's the model in the lingerie advertisement. She wants to extort money and assault me.'

Gu Jing took out her video camera from her pants pocket and she recorded the crowd's faces. 'Tell me, do I look like the model in the lingerie advertisement?'

The crowd compared 'the young man' in a wrinkled shirt and baggy pants to the lingerie advertisement. Everyone in the crowd shook their head and they sharpened their tongues.

'Hehe... you think with your looks you can advertise lingerie? What a joke,' the first employee said.

'You look nothing like the model in the photo. Whose money do you want to extort?' a second employee said.

'Someone call security to escort this scammer to the police station,' a third employee said.

Gu Jing silently recorded the crowd's faces and she recorded her face and outfit too.

Wang Shao Huang pointed at the front door. 'I told you this photo belongs to Wang's company. You're welcome to sue Wang's company. Wang's company's lawyers will be happy to oppose you. If you're smart then you should hurry up and leave otherwise I'll call security.'

Gu Jing turned off her video camera and she put it in her pants pocket. 'Ok, I'll

leave.’ She wiped dust off her pants and she laughed coldly. ‘If you say I’m not the person in the photo then I’m not the person in the photo.’

Gu Jing left Wang Shao Huang’s company, but she returned to Wang Shao Huang’s company within half an hour.

Gu Jing wore a mini dress over a pair of heels, which showed off her long slender legs. She wore makeup and a wig that fell to her shoulders.

The same crowd salivated at Gu Jing’s luscious body and praises flowed out of their mouths.

‘Isn’t she the lingerie model?’ the first employee said.

‘That’s right. She’s more beautiful in person than in the photo,’ the second employee said.

‘She’s stunning. I wonder what her name is,’ the third employee said.

‘Ask PR to contact her model agency and you’ll know,’ the first employee said.

Gu Jing barged into Wang Shang Huang’s office and she slammed the door shut. She turned on her video camera and she recorded Wang Shang Huang’s face and body.

Wang Shang Huang thought the beautiful woman in front of her looked familiar. ‘You... ah!’

Gu Jing punctured Wang Shao Huang’s water bra and water flowed down Wang Shao Huang’s legs.

‘Do you want me to help you call the police? I didn’t assault you. You accidentally bumped into me and your water bra leaked. Didn’t you say I’m not the lingerie model? Then you have nothing to worry about if you call the police. It’ll be convenient if the police come here so I can report your company for using my image without my consent,’ Gu Jing said.

Wang Shao Huang’s face turned bleach white.

Gu Jing laughed coldly. ‘Since you used my photo without my consent, I’ll post this video of you on the internet and we can be famous together.’

Gu Jing walked triumphantly outside Wang Shao Huang’s office.

Inside Wang Shao Huang’s office she screamed loud enough for everyone on the ground floor to hear. ‘Ah! Why did it turn out like this?’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirty

***Related***

# Thirty-One

## Chapter Thirty-One

Gu Jing left Wang Shao Huang's company in high spirits.

Suddenly Gu Jing's phone stopped working. She remembered she had her phone in her pants pocket during the lake incident, and she realised her phone broke because of water damage.

Gu Jing returned to the studio and she received a phone call from a real estate agent. The real estate agent gave her good news, the landlord of an affordable apartment in a good neighbourhood she wanted to live in finally signed her lease contract and it became available to move in immediately.

Gu Jing scribbled her new address on a note for Peng Cheng Gui. Gu Jing hummed, packed her suitcases and she moved to her new apartment.

Gu Jing arrived at her new apartment, it was almost spacious as Zhen Lang's apartment except it only had one bedroom.

Gu Jing walked into her new bedroom and she saw a giant bed.

Gu Jing's dream came true. She leased a place with a giant bed. In the old and cramped apartment she leased the bed was tiny and she used to roll off the tiny bed many times each night.

Gu Jing unpacked and she walked to a nearby supermarket. At the supermarket she bought a carton of beer and junk food.

Gu Jing carried her beer and junk food home. The sweat on her clothes made her uncomfortable. She took off her clothes in the bathroom and she turned on the shower faucet.

Gu Jing hummed in the shower but she heard someone rang the doorbell. She thought it was Peng Cheng Gui. She turned off the shower faucet. She grabbed a towel and she wrapped it around her head.

'I'm coming,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing grabbed a shirt she unpacked and put in the bathroom. She put it on,

but it wasn't her shirt. The shirt belonged to Zhen Lang. She didn't understand why Zhen Lang's clothes were in her suitcases.

Gu Jing put aside her surprise, she rushed to the front door and another surprise waited for her behind the front door.

The jinx held suitcases in his hands. Immediately Gu Jing closed the front door. But Zhen Lang had quick reflexes, he held the door opened wide enough for him to walk into her home.

In the morning Gu Jing did feel guilty she wrongly accused Zhen Lang of selling her photo, because she realised Wang Shao Huang stole her photo and it had nothing to do with Zhen Lang. But she reasoned it was still Zhen Lang the jinx's fault, because Wang Shao Huang wouldn't target her if she wasn't associated with the jinx.

'What are you doing here?' Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang looked at his wet shirt that barely covered Gu Jing's bottom, his eyes travelled down her bare legs and he smiled. 'Someone destroyed my apartment. I came here for compensation.'

'It wasn't me,' Gu Jing denied.

Zhen Lang rubbed his shirt on Gu Jing's body. 'Then why did you steal my clothes?'

'I... I didn't steal it,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang laughed. 'The evidence is on your body.' He closed the front door. 'I think there are a lot of things between us that we need to sort out slowly together.'

'We don't have anything...' Gu Jing said. She looked away from Zhen Lang's intense eyes. 'You... you go outside. I need to buy groceries.'

Zhen Lang took a step closer to Gu Jing and he frowned. 'Where are your slippers?'

'My-' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang spotted two pairs of Gu Jing's slippers near the sofa. He took three steps to the sofa. He put down his suitcases on the floor. Then he took off his

shoes and he wore one pair of her slippers.

Gu Jing puffed her cheeks. On the inside she cursed Zhen Lang – ‘Hey, aren’t you scared your big feet will tear my slippers?’

Zhen Lang took out a jacket from one of his suitcases. He took three steps to Gu Jing and he passed his jacket to her. ‘Put this on.’

Gu Jing stared at her slippers on Zhen Lang’s big feet so she didn’t notice anything else.

Zhen Lang lifted Gu Jing and he carried her toward the sofa.

Gu Jing gasped and she wrapped her arms around Zhen Lang’s neck. ‘What are you doing?’

‘I’m taking you to your slippers,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang put Gu Jing on the sofa. He squatted and he picked up her other pair of slippers.

Gu Jing moved to a corner of the sofa and she covered her wet chest with Zhen Lang’s jacket.

Zhen Lang waved Gu Jing’s slippers in the air. ‘Come here.’

Gu Jing shook her head and she didn’t move.

Zhen Lang sat on the floor. He grabbed Gu Jing’s legs and he pulled her off the sofa and onto his lap. She tried to wiggle out of his lap, but he didn’t let her go and the shirt she wore rose higher above her thighs.

Zhen Lang put his hands on Gu Jing’s bottom. ‘If you keep jumping around, I’ll hit your bottom.’

Gu Jing sat still on Zhen Lang’s lap. He let go of her bottom and he put slippers onto her feet. He took the towel off Gu Jing’s head and he dried her hair.

‘Do you feel better?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘Um. I’m not sick anymore... I didn’t destroy your home,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Then you didn’t run away? You’re dishonest and hot headed as your fever. You didn’t say a word to me and disappeared. I ran around looking for you and I didn’t sleep for two days. How are you going to compensate me?’ Zhen Lang



said.

Gu Jing felt guilty she made Zhen Lang worried about her for two days, but she didn't want to admit she ran away because she didn't dare face him. 'You can't blame me. My phone broke from water damage.'

'Then did you think I bought your photo to give it to Wang's company? Is that why you destroyed my home? How are you going to compensate me?' Zhen Lang asked sternly.

Gu Jing realised Zhen Lang found out what happened.

'I looked everywhere for you. When I got home, I found you pinned a disfigured photo of me on my bedroom door,' Zhen Lang said.

'It's your fault for being a jinx!' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang took out his phone from his pants pocket. He dialled aunty Gu's number. 'I'm going to tell aunty Gu that you destroyed my home.'

'Don't...' Gu Jing said. She grabbed Zhen Lang's phone and she smiled sweetly. 'I'll pay for your home renovations.'

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing's chin. 'While my house is renovated, where will I stay? It'll take at least two months to renovate my home. It'll be too noisy if I stay there during the next two months. I have many scheduled surgeries to perform, if I don't get a peaceful rest...' His eyes swept around her apartment. 'I think this place is a peaceful place.'

'No!' Gu Jing said. She bit her lips. 'You can find somewhere else to live. This is my home.'

Zhen Lang opened Gu Jing's hand and he retrieved his phone. 'Looks like I still need to tell aunty Gu you destroyed my home since I don't have a peaceful place to stay.'

Gu Jing scoffed. 'If you want to tell my mum then tell my mum!'

Gu Jing didn't care if Zhen Lang the jinx threatened to tell her parents or if he threatened to kill her, because she didn't want the jinx to live together with her in her home.

'Oh I forgot. I also need to tell aunty Gu you promised to marry me,' Zhen Lang

said.

Gu Jing pinned Zhen Lang onto the floor. Her legs straddled his body, she sat on his stomach and she gripped his arms. 'Don't call.'

'Then where will I stay?' Zhen Lang asked.

'You'll stay here!' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang sighed. 'I'm a pitiful man whose home is destroyed. If I stay here I'll be treated like a butler, it's better if I live alone.'

On the inside Gu Jing cursed Zhen Lang – 'What do you want? You're the one who came here and insisted to stay here. I'm not the one who wanted you to stay here!'

'I still need to tell aunty Gu about us. Besides I've never lied or hid anything from our parents before,' Zhen Lang said.

'I'll be your maid!' Gu Jing said. She smiled sweetly. 'We're adults and we moved out of our parents homes already. We don't need to tell our parents everything.'

'Will you clean the house?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing nodded her head.

'Will you wash our clothes?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing nodded her head.

'Every day will you go grocery shopping with me?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing frowned and she nodded her head.

'Every morning will you make a cup of coffee for me before I get out of bed?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing's face paled and she nodded her head.

'Will you sleep on the sofa and let me sleep on the bed?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing stood. 'Why do I need to sleep on the sofa?'

Gu Jing didn't want to give up her beautiful giant and comfortable bed.

'I'm a doctor, I need a peaceful rest. If you refuse my conditions then I'll tell

aunty Gu about us,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing felt depressed and heartbroken over the bed of her dreams. She reluctantly nodded her head.

'But... I feel hiding such an important secret from our parents is too sinful-' Zhen Lang said.

'You don't need to feel guilty. It's settled!' Gu Jing said. She grabbed Zhen Lang's phone. 'You'll sleep on my bed, I'll sleep on the sofa, I'll clean the house, I'll wash the dishes and our clothes. I'll make you coffee in the mornings and I'll go grocery shopping with you in the evenings.'

'Ok,' Zhen Lang said. He rubbed his eyes and he pretended to yawn to hide his smile. 'I'll take a short nap. Later we'll go buy dinner together.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirty-One

***Related***

# Thirty-Two

## Chapter Thirty-Two

Gu Jing fell off the sofa and bumped her head for the thirteenth time.

Gu Jing wrapped her bedsheet around her body and she slept on the floor.

Zhen Lang heard the thirteenth thump sound. He got out of bed and he walked to the living room. He saw Gu Jing slept on the floor. He propped an arm under her shoulders and neck. 'Little girl, go sleep on the bed.'

'Mmm... no,' Gu Jing mumbled. 'If I sleep on the sofa I'll fall down again. The floor is more comfortable.'

Zhen Lang sighed. 'Go sleep on the bed.'

'No...' Gu Jing said. She swatted bees in her dream. 'I don't want to get up.'

Zhen Lang lifted Gu Jing and he carried her to the bed.

Gu Jing felt a soft warm bed under her body. She sniffed the bedspread, it smelt like a familiar scent and she felt comfortable and safe.

Zhen Lang walked to the kitchen and he made a cup of coffee. He returned to the bedroom and he sat in bed next to Gu Jing. He sipped coffee, he picked up a book and he opened the book. He watched her sleep and he didn't turn another page.

Gu Jing sniffed in her sleep and she smelt delicious coffee. She opened her sleepy eyes and she looked for the coffee.

Gu Jing saw a blurry bright light. She blinked several times and she saw a side profile of Zhen Lang's face. His eyelashes were curly, his nose looked straight, his lips curved upward and she thought he looked like a silent statue.

The statue turned its head around, it smiled and startled Gu Jing.

'Are you hungry?' Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang didn't ask Gu Jing if she was awake, but he asked her if she was hungry and she realised he understood her the most.

Gu Jing sat upright, hugged her bedsheet and nodded her head. She stared at the cup of coffee in Zhen Lang's hand.

'You need to eat breakfast before you drink coffee,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing scoffed. 'You didn't eat breakfast, but you're drinking coffee already.'

Zhen Lang laughed and he passed the cup of coffee to Gu Jing. 'After you drink the coffee, go brush your teeth, wash your face and change clothes. Then we'll go grocery shopping.'

Gu Jing drank the cup of coffee until only one drop of coffee remained at the bottom of the cup. She passed the cup of coffee to Zhen Lang, she jumped out of bed and she ran to the bathroom.

Zhen Lang held the cup of coffee and his eyes followed Gu Jing until she entered the bathroom. He drank the last drop of coffee and he smiled.

At the supermarkets Gu Jing pushed the trolley like she rode a manual scooter and occasionally she put junk food into the trolley.

Zhen Lang walked behind Gu Jing and he looked for cleaning products.

'What do you use to wash dishes?' Zhen Lang asked.

'A sponge,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang put a sponge into the trolley.

'What size towel do you use to dry dishes?' Zhen Lang asked.

'Large,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang put a large towel into the trolley.

'Do you use liquid detergent or powder detergent to wash clothes?' Zhen Lang asked.

'Liquid detergent,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang put a bag of liquid detergent into the trolley.

Gu Jing finally suspected why Zhen Lang asked her questions about cleaning products. 'Why did you ask me about what cleaning products I use?'

Zhen Lang put a bottle of dish washing detergent into the trolley and he patted

Gu Jing's arm. 'Because you'll be doing the housework. The least I can do is be considerate and buy cleaning products you prefer to use to clean.'

Gu Jing scoffed and she glared at Zhen Lang.

'It's ok if you don't want to do housework,' Zhen Lang said. He waved his phone in front of Gu Jing's face. 'I'll tell aunty Gu about us and I'll stay somewhere else since I'm not used to having someone else serve me.'

Gu Jing gritted her teeth. 'Ok, I'll do the housework. I'm happy to serve you to death.'

Zhen Lang smiled and he put healthy food into the trolley. 'That will make me very happy. If you give me good service, I'll give you the bed tonight.'

Gu Jing knew Zhen Lang wanted to torture her and watch her let out crazy outbursts, which was why he wanted to live with her.

Gu Jing puffed her cheeks. She secretly put a carton of beer and the highest alcohol concentrated bottle of wine into the trolley. 'Zhen Lang shouldn't we have a banquet dinner tonight to celebrate us living together again?'

Zhen Lang picked up trays of meat and he pretended he didn't see Gu Jing put a carton of beer and a strong bottle of wine into the trolley. 'Ok.'

'If I'm welcoming you into my home, what do you think about letting me be your hostess? Don't worry I won't do anything to you that will make you call my mum,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang stared at the trays of meat in his hands and he pretended he contemplated about Gu Jing's suggestion.

Gu Jing smiled sweetly. 'Mr Vet, how did you know the address of my new home?'

On the inside Gu Jing rejoiced. She thought of the perfect plan to force Zhen Lang to leave her home and also give him an incentive not to tell her mum about what she promised him.

'I looked for you at the studio and coincidentally I saw the note you left on a table,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang smiled because he thought about how his wallet lost a few hundred

Yuan notes in order for Peng Cheng Gui to 'coincidentally' let him see the address Gu Jing scribbled on a note.

'I want to eat steamed seafood, braised pig's trotters and braised beef with mushrooms,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing stared at the bottle of wine inside the trolley and she smiled.

Zhen Lang put trays of seafood, pork and beef into the trolley.

Gu Jing pushed the trolley to the checkout counter and Zhen Lang paid for the groceries.

Zhen Lang wanted to carry the grocery bags, but Gu Jing picked up the bags before he could touch a bag.

'Let me carry the bags,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang walked beside Gu Jing who wore a feminine top and pants that he secretly put on the bed for Gu Jing before she came out of the bathroom.

On the way home Gu Jing hummed and she thought about how in the morning she came out of the bathroom and she saw a beautiful outfit on her bed. She remembered she didn't hesitate to put it on then she dragged Zhen Lang to the supermarkets.

Men on the streets saw a handsome man and his beautiful girlfriend carried heavy grocery bags and the men envied the handsome man.

'Do you want me to help you carry some of the bags?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing smiled sweetly and she shook her head. 'Let me, I want to serve you to death.'

The men on the streets nearly fainted from excessive envy toward the lucky handsome man.

At home Zhen Lang cooked Gu Jing's favourite dishes for dinner.

Zhen Lang walked out of the kitchen and he saw Gu Jing held a glass of wine in front of him.

Gu Jing smiled sweetly. 'Zhen Lang, let's make a toast to celebrate us living together again.'

Gu Jing put the glass of wine into Zhen Lang's hand and she clinked their glasses together.

Gu Jing took a sip and she wiped her mouth. 'Tomorrow is your day off and you don't have a surgery scheduled the day after tomorrow. It's ok if you drink a little, besides I chose a weak bottle of wine for us to drink.'

Zhen Lang smiled and he drank the glass of wine.

Gu Jing dragged Zhen Lang to the dining table and she sat next to him.

Gu Jing picked up the strong bottle of wine on the dining table and she refilled hers and Zhen Lang's wine glasses.

'Let's toast to our twenty-five year relationship,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang drank a second glass of wine.

'Let's toast to me giving you good service,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang drank a third glass of wine.

'Let's toast to our fate of attending the same elementary school, high school and college,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang drank a fourth glass of wine.

'Let's toast to our ancestors,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang drank a fifth glass of wine.

'Let's toast to our future happy lives,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang drank a sixth glass of wine.

Zhen Lang's eyes gleamed brightly. 'Do you want to get me drunk so you can take a photo of me and threaten me with it like you did back in school?'

Gu Jing's hands shook and she nearly dropped the bottle of wine. 'How can I use the same tactic to fool a person twice?'

Gu Jing refilled hers and Zhen Lang's wine glasses. 'Let's toast to your delicious home cooked meals.'

Zhen Lang smiled and he drank a seventh glass of wine.

Zhen Lang pretended to be drunk. He squinted his eyes, shook his head and



rubbed his temples.

Gu Jing saw Zhen Lang looked drunk and her heart bloomed.

Gu Jing knew when it came to drinking, Zhen Lang couldn't win against her especially if they drank a strong bottle of wine.

Gu Jing opened a carton of beer on the dining table. 'We drank a bottle of wine to celebrate. Let's drink beer to continue our celebration.'

'I can't drink anymore. My head is dizzy,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing held the beer to Zhen Lang's mouth. 'Drink the beer. It's cold and it'll help clear your head.'

Zhen Lang laughed. 'If you serve me beer then I'll drink.'

'Ok, I'll serve you beer and you'll drink,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang shook his head and he pointed a finger at Gu Jing. 'You drink it first for me to see.'

Gu Jing drank a sip of beer. She put the beer on the dining table and suddenly Zhen Lang kissed her.

Zhen Lang sucked the sip of beer Gu Jing drank into his mouth. He swallowed the sip of beer. His tongue licked her sweet tongue mixed with the taste of the strong wine and beer.

Gu Jing's soul floated on top of her clouds. Her body only focused on Zhen Lang's tongue that licked her tongue and his hot lips that kissed her lips.

Gu Jing didn't know how long Zhen Lang kissed her. But she finally inhaled oxygen when Zhen Lang buried his head between her neck and shoulder and she heard his steady breaths.

Gu Jing regained her senses and she pushed Zhen Lang's heavy body. 'Hey, let's drink beer.'

It didn't matter how hard Gu Jing pushed Zhen Lang's heavy body, because he didn't react.

Gu Jing cackled, because she used the same tactic to fool Zhen Lang twice. She lifted his heavy body over her shoulder.

Gu Jing struggled to carry Zhen Lang to the bed. She threw his heavy body onto the bed. She thought he slept like a pig, but he looked like a handsome gallant prince in fairy tales.

Gu Jing felt like an evil princess in fairy tales. She unbuttoned Zhen Lang's shirt and she tossed his shirt on the floor.

Gu Jing felt Zhen Lang's bare chest felt hot from the alcohol. She struggled to take his pants off and she fell onto his chest.

Gu Jing sniffed Zhen Lang's chest and she felt he smelt more appetizing than cologne.

Gu Jing rubbed his chest for a while and she felt a strange sensation in her heart. Her hands brushed over his nipples and she slid her hands down his chest toward his waist.

Gu Jing touched Zhen Lang's bottom and her eyes lingered on his underwear.

Gu Jing remembered twenty-years ago what was inside Zhen Lang's underwear was small and soft. Twenty-five years later she realised what was inside Zhen Lang's underwear was big and hard.

Gu Jing remembered that year she took Zhen Lang's clothes off in a rush because Lin Tu Shen laid beside him in bed. Back then she didn't get a chance to look closely at Zhen Lang's body.

Gu Jing turned her head away from Zhen Lang's body and her hands probed his underwear. She contemplated for a while whether to look or not look.

Gu Jing decided to look and she turned her head to look closer at Zhen Lang's whole body.

'Are you going to take a photo?' Zhen Lang whispered.

The whisper prompted Gu Jing about her plan. She jumped off the bed and she looked everywhere in her room for her camera.

'The camera's inside the box you left on the balcony,' Zhen Lang whispered.

Gu Jing ran to her balcony. She opened a box and she found her favourite camera. She carried her camera back inside her room.

Zhen Lang sat upright on the bed. ‘What position do you want me in? I’ll cooperate with you.’

‘Ah!’ Gu Jing cried out.

Gu Jing realised something impossible happened, because Zhen Lang was sober the whole night and he caught her red handed. She hid her camera and she ran outside her room.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirty-Two

***Related***

# Thirty-Three

## Chapter Thirty-Three

Gu Jing ran to the living room and she laid on the sofa.

Gu Jing didn't understand why her heart pounded. Clearly she held Zhen Lang's body in the past so she didn't need to worry he caught her red handed. She hit her head against the sofa a few times, but her heart pounded nonstop.

Gu Jing closed her eyes and she saw Zhen Lang's seductive body on the bed. She shook her head but the image of his body didn't go away.

Gu Jing sniffed her hand and she smelt Zhen Lang's body scent combined with alcohol like a unique cologne.

Gu Jing lethargically got off the sofa. She saw the empty bottle of wine on the table and on the inside she cursed the black belly Zhen Lang – 'You drank that much wine and you didn't get a stomach ache. I wish you'll get a stomach ulcer!'

Gu Jing's stomach rumbled. She sat at the dining table and she ate the braised beef with mushrooms. She felt Zhen Lang was a master chef despite his black belly.

Zhen Lang cooked Gu Jing's favourite dishes and she happily ate his delicious food. Suddenly she realised she didn't hear anything from the bedroom. She suspected he planned another ambush so she put her chopsticks down and she sneaked to the bedroom.

Gu Jing poked her head through the bedroom door and she spied on Zhen Lang. He held his stomach and he groaned. His pale face looked at the glass of water on a bedside table.

Gu Jing stepped into the bedroom. 'Mr Vet, what's wrong?'

Zhen Lang leaned his back against the bedhead and he shook his head. 'Do you want to sleep on the bed tonight? We can swap, I'll sleep on the sofa.'

Gu Jing silently stepped toward the bed. At a close distance she saw sweat on Zhen Lang's forehead and on his shirt.

‘You...’ Gu Jing said. She slowly inched closer the bed and she bit her lips. ‘Do you feel sick?’

‘I’m ok. Bring your bedsheet in here and I’ll go outside,’ Zhen Lang said weakly.

Gu Jing crawled onto the bed like a kitten. She put her hand on Zhen Lang’s hot forehead. ‘Mr Vet, who do you want to fool?’

The sweat on Zhen Lang’s forehead covered Gu Jing’s hand. She held his hand. ‘Are you sick?’

‘I’m ok. I drank too much but I didn’t eat anything. My stomach hurts. I want to find pain relief but I didn’t put any in my suitcase.’

Gu Jing panicked. She regretted she wished Zhen Lang had a stomach ulcer. ‘Let’s go to the hospital.’

Zhen Lang pinched Gu Jing’s chin. ‘I don’t need to go to the hospital. Can you get me a glass of warm water?’

Gu Jing jumped off the bed and she ran to the kitchen.

Zhen Lang heard a loud commotion from the kitchen and he smiled.

Gu Jing rushed back to the bedroom with a warm glass of water. She wrapped an arm around Zhen Lang’s shoulders and she held the warm glass of water for him.

In Gu Jing’s memories Zhen Lang was invincible and he didn’t own any weaknesses.

Zhen Lang drank a sip of warm water and he caressed Gu Jing’s cheek. ‘You didn’t eat dinner. Go and eat.’

‘Perhaps you’re right. You have a stomach ache because you didn’t eat dinner. I’ll go get dinner for you,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing put the empty glass of water on the bedside table.

‘You don’t need to. It’s an occupational hazard. Sometimes I miss lunch and dinner during long surgeries. If I rest for a while I’ll be ok,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Then... did I get you to drink too much wine and made you sick?’ Gu Jing asked softly.

Zhen Lang patted Gu Jing's cheek. He pulled her closer to him and she sat on his legs. 'My body is ok. I just need to rest for a while.'

Gu Jing gently rubbed Zhen Lang's stomach and Zhen Lang smiled. 'Little girl, you rubbing my stomach makes me think about our childhood.'

Gu Jing laughed. She puffed her cheeks and she blew on Zhen Lang's stomach. 'Pain fly away. Zhen Lang don't cry, Jing Jing will rub your pain away.'

Zhen Lang and Gu Jing laughed loudly.

'When we were children, other children would bully you and I chased them away for you,' Gu Jing said. She scoffed. 'Then I had to comfort someone who cried and had a runny nose.'

Zhen Lang smiled and he pointed a finger at his cheek. 'What else?'

Gu Jing kissed Zhen Lang's cheeks. 'Jing Jing kissed your pain away, you can't cry anymore.'

'What else?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing wrapped her hands around Zhen Lang's neck and she hugged him. 'Jing Jing will protect Zhen Lang for the rest of your life, ok?'

Zhen Lang's eyes shone brightly. 'Ok.'

Gu Jing laughed. 'Then Zhen Lang needs to give Jing Jing a lollipop and ice-cream.'

In that moment Gu Jing remembered how she and Zhen Lang loved and protected each other when they were children clearer than she remembered hers and Zhen Lang's battles as adults.

'I'll give you all my lollipops and ice-cream. I'm ok, you should go and eat dinner,' Zhen Lang said.

'I'll get you a bowl of rice,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang shook his head. 'I can't eat solid food while I have a stomach ache.'

'Then... I'll make you congee,' Gu Jing said.

'You know how to make congee?' Zhen Lang asked.

‘I can learn to make congee,’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang patted Gu Jing’s bottom. ‘Ok. If you can make me congee, I’ll forgive you for getting me drunk.’

‘How do I make congee?’ Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang instructed Gu Jing about the rice and water quantity ratio to make congee. ‘After you finish this step I’ll instruct you what to do next.’

Gu Jing jumped off the bed, she ran to the kitchen and she followed Zhen Lang’s instructions. Whilst she waited for the congee to cook in the pot she saw two salty eggs.

‘Mr Vet, can I make you salty duck eggs and minced pork congee?’ Gu Jing asked loudly.

Zhen Lang laughed. ‘Are you certain you can make it?’

‘Of course!’ Gu Jing said loudly.

Gu Jing put salty eggs into the congee pot. She poured another warm glass of water for Zhen Lang and she ran back to the bedroom to give it to him.

Gu Jing ran back to the kitchen, she opened the fridge and she took out minced pork. She put the minced pork into the congee pot. She scooped a bit of the broth with a ladle and she felt it tasted different to Zhen Lang’s delicious congee.

‘Remember to add ginger to get rid of the raw meat smell,’ Zhen Lang said from the bathroom.

Gu Jing didn’t find any ginger in the fridge but she found ginger lollies in the pantry. She unwrapped some ginger lollies and she put it into the congee pot.

‘Did you put the ginger in yet?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing tasted the broth and it still didn’t taste like Zhen Lang’s delicious congee. ‘Mr Vet, what else do I need to add?’

‘Salt,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing put a spoon of salt into the congee pot and she turned off the stove. She scooped congee into a bowl and she didn’t know why it turned black.

Zhen Lang stepped out of the bathroom and he walked into the kitchen. He grabbed the bowl of congee Gu Jing hid behind her back.

‘I... I don’t know why it turned black,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Did you put in ginger lollies?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘There’s still ginger in ginger lollies,’ Gu Jing protested.

‘Did you put salty duck eggs in before the rice cooked?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang scooped a spoonful of congee and he saw a piece of minced pork about four centimetres thick.

‘Do I need to put the salty duck eggs after the rice is cooked?’ Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang laughed. He swallowed a spoonful of congee and his face winced behind the bowl.

Gu Jing took a deep breath. ‘How does it taste? Is it edible? It’s my first time cooking congee.’

Zhen Lang nodded his head. ‘It’s good. I’ll eat the congee and you can eat dinner.’

At the dining table Gu Jing hummed and ate the rest of her dinner happily. She watched Zhen Lang ate the bowl of soup and on the inside she applauded herself for being a natural cooking genius.

After dinner Gu Jing’s happiness deflated, she saw sweat everywhere on Zhen Lang’s body and he had a high fever. She took him to the hospital for treatment, because she worried her natural cooking genius skills poisoned him.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirty-Three

***Related***



# Thirty-Four

## Chapter Thirty-Four

Gu Jing arrived at the studio and she saw men in suits surrounded Peng Cheng Gui.

The men didn't look like potential clients, they looked like businessmen.

Peng Cheng Gui politely escorted the men to the front door and the men walked pass Gu Jing without a greeting.

'Who are they?' Gu Jing asked.

'They were looking for you,' Peng Cheng Gui said. She passed Gu Jing a newspaper. 'Take a look for yourself.'

Gu Jing read the front page of the newspaper – 'Wang's company apologises to the lingerie model for using her image without her consent.'

'A big company is a big company indeed. Even their apology is bigger than other people's apologies, enough to be move hearts,' Gu Jing said sarcastically.

Gu Jing forgotten about Wang Shao Huang, she didn't expect someone as haughty as Wang Shao Huang would publicly apologise to her.

'Do you think they came to apologise to someone like you?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

'Were the men from Wang's company? They were bowing to you like they were begging you for forgiveness,' Gu Jing said.

'They weren't begging me. They were begging you,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

'Begging me? Don't tell me they want the video I shot of Wang Shao Huang,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing didn't believe the blurry video of Wang Shao Huang had such a big threat against Wang's company for Wang Shao Huang to send men to beg her for the video.

'They begged you to put in a good word for them with Wen Lang's company.'

News that Wen Lang's company wanted to do a business deal with Wang's company increased Wang's company shares. But at the last minute Wen's company didn't sign a business contract with Wang's company and Wang's company shares plummet,' Peng Cheng Gui said.

'Wen Lang's company? It has nothing to do with me,' Gu Jing said.

Peng Cheng Gui sighed. She knew sometimes talking to Gu Jing was like talking to a brick wall. 'Didn't someone say they wanted to take leave to visit their parents? Are you at the studio because you miss me and don't want to be far away from me?'

Gu Jing's face flushed red. 'Cheng Cheng, can you teach me how to make congee?'

'Make congee? Did you take the wrong medicine?' Peng Cheng Gui asked.

Gu Jing shook her head and she took a deep breath. 'Zhen Lang is in hospital because he ate my cooking.'

Peng Cheng Gui laughed. 'It's his fault for being foolish enough to eat your cooking. What a sacrificial doctor, should I award a fool's medal for him?'

Gu Jing's face flushed a brighter red. 'Are you going to teach me or not?'

'I'll teach you...' Peng Cheng Gui said. 'But I'm curious if you cooked him a dish the worst that could happen is that your food wouldn't taste edible. How did he end up in the hospital?'

'I don't know,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing remembered she took Zhen Lang to the hospital and his senior colleague lectured him for more than half an hour for being an adult with no common sense eating and drinking bad food, and that as a doctor he should know better. But Zhen Lang silently listened to his senior colleague's lecture and occasionally Zhen Lang looked at her and he smiled, which made her feel guilty.

On the way to the studio from the hospital Gu Jing clearly remembered Zhen Lang's senior colleague's advice – 'Zhen Lang can't eat or drink bad food again or he'll have a relapse of stomach aches. He needs to eat soft nutritious food like congee.'

Peng Cheng Gui didn't need to ask why Gu Jing wanted to make congee for Zhen Lang instead of buying congee. She picked up her bag and she waved her bag in front of Gu Jing. 'Let's go.'

Peng Cheng Gui took Gu Jing to her family home and her whole family taught Gu Jing to cook congee in the kitchen.

'Ah! The kitchen is on fire... the congee is overflowing. Cheng Cheng, save me... fire...' Gu Jing said.

With the additional guidance of Peng Cheng Gui's parents and grandparents there were six people in the kitchen who salvaged a pot of congee that caught on fire and they managed to produce an edible large bowl of congee.

Gu Jing carefully carried the precious Dewar flask of congee to the front door, and she apologised to Peng Cheng Gui's family for the state of their kitchen.

Peng Cheng Gui saw Gu Jing walked slowly in the direction of the hospital and she mumbled to herself – 'Oh Gu Jing, if only you can see your gentle face in the mirror. I've known you for many years and it's the first time I've seen your gentle face. If Zhen Lang sees your gentle face, he'll be willing to be sent to the hospital again.'

Gu Jing protected the Dewar flask of congee all the way to the hospital. When she arrived at the hospital it was evening and she worried Zhen Lang already ate dinner.

Gu Jing walked toward the elevator and she saw a young beautiful girl dressed in black inside the elevator who carried a floral Dewar flask.

'Hold the elevator!' Gu Jing cried out.

Gu Jing tripped and fell on the floor but she saved the Dewar flask in her arms. On the floor she helplessly watched the elevator doors closed.

Gu Jing took the next elevator to Zhen Lang's hospital room.

Gu Jing arrived at Zhen Lang's hospital room, but she stood outside because she saw the same young beautiful girl dressed in black with the floral Dewar flask inside his room.

'Didn't you say you just flew home? You didn't need to be in a rush to visit me,'

Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing hid behind the door of the empty room next to Zhen Lang's room, but she heard Zhen Lang's polite voice clearly.

'I arrived home yesterday and I caught up with former classmates. They told me you're in the hospital and they gave me your phone number. This is the ginseng soup I made this morning. It's nutritious and good for stomach aches,' Chen Wei said.

Gu Jing looked at the Dewar flask she held and she silently compared the price of the congee she made with ginseng soup. She knew ginseng cost three hundred Yuan per ounce, but her congee soup if she included gas and water expenses it would only cost her five Yuan to make.

'I'm ok. Two more days and I'll be discharged from the hospital. Did you come back this time to visit your family or are you staying permanently?' Zhen Lang asked.

Chen Wei sighed. 'I'm staying. If I see someone compatible then I'll get married.'

'You're not married?' Zhen Lang asked.

'Hehe... Zhen Lang, you're not married either. Yesterday I told you I'll give you a surprise. But you gave someone else a bigger surprise and made them worry to death,' Lin Tu Shen said.

'I should go home and let you rest,' Chen Wei said.

'Be careful on the way home,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing recognised the face of the young beautiful girl dressed in black who left Zhen Lang's room, it was Chen Wei! She remembered Chen Wei was Zhen Lang's only girlfriend in the past. She regretted she didn't carry a camera to the hospital to capture Chen Wei's beauty.

'This time you killed two birds with one stone. You get to rest in the hospital and have Chen Wei visit you too. You should have seen Chen Wei's pale face yesterday when she heard you're in the hospital. It's been many years but she hasn't forgotten you,' Lin Tu Shen said.

‘Even if you didn’t say anything, no one would accuse you of being a mute,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘You can fool others but you can’t fool me. Where are your hospital admission forms? Where are the subscriptions your doctor gave you? You’re in the hospital but you don’t even have a single needle on you. Has this hospital gone bankrupt that it can’t afford to give you an IV drip?’ Lin Tu Shen said.

Lin Tu Shen knocked on a table. ‘You can only fool that muddled head girl. If you want to fool me you need to put in more effort. You could have thrown up the food so you wouldn’t get a stomach ache and resort to taking this kind of measure. When I heard you’re in the hospital I didn’t understand what game you’re playing. Now I understand. You want to play Gu Jing, right?’

Gu Jing gripped the Dewar flask and Lin Tu Shen’s words echoed in her head. She realised Zhen Lang wasn’t sick, he only wanted to play her. It meant everything Zhen Lang said to her were lies, he played her to wait for her to reveal her biggest weakness!

Gu Jing didn’t want to break a door or destroy a room, she silently walked downstairs.

Gu Jing calmly walked to the convenience shop next to the hospital and she bought a bag of salt and a bag of sugar. She received curious looks from the people inside the convenience shop, but she smiled politely and she walked back to the hospital.

Gu Jing walked into the empty room next to Zhen Lang’s room. She emptied some of the congee in a rubbish bin and she poured salt and sugar inside the Dewar flask. She threw the unused salt and sugar in the rubbish bin.

Gu Jing calmly walked to Zhen Lang’s room and she put the Dewar flask on a table. ‘I spent the whole day making this congee. Zhen Lang, do you want to eat it?’

Gu Jing gripped Lin Tu Shen’s arm so he couldn’t escape. ‘Lin Tu Shen if you haven’t eaten dinner then you should eat too. You and Zhen Lang can each eat a bowl of congee.’

Gu Jing poured the congee into two bowls. She put the bowls in Zhen Lang and

Lin Tu Shen’s hands and she cackled. ‘If anyone dares to waste the effort I put into making this congee then I’ll throw that person out the window from the second floor!’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirty-Four

***Related***

# Thirty-Five

## Chapter Thirty-Five

Gu Jing laid on the sofa and Dou Dou rolled on her stomach.

Gu Jing tickled Dou Dou, he laughed and revealed his baby teeth.

Gu Jing hugged Dou Dou like a pillow. She squeezed his cheek and patted his bottom. He laughed and dribbled on her clothes.

‘Little boy, only you and aunty have nothing to do. Let aunty squeeze your cheeks. You’re not allowed to grow up,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing stayed at her parents’ house with nothing to do for three days. Her dad worked and he played chess at home. Her mum did housework and she looked after Dou Dou.

Gu Jing hated to be close to males, but adorable little boys like Dou Dou were exceptions. She especially loved looking after chubby children like Dou Dou.

Mrs Gu shook Dou Dou’s milk bottle in her hand. ‘Little girl, why aren’t you going back to work? Are you here to wait for death?’

Gu Jing couldn’t believe her mum didn’t appreciate her visiting her mum and dad.

Gu Jing accepted Dou Dou’s milk bottle. She tested two drops of milk on her wrist, she felt satisfied the milk was warm and not hot. She gave the bottle to Dou Dou. ‘Am I not allowed to miss home?’

‘If you miss home then make a new home yourself. I can see clearly how much you love children,’ Mrs Gu said. She sat on a chair opposite the sofa and she peeled a bowl of onions. ‘You’re allowed to miss home, but you cooped yourself here for nearly a week. I’m certain you’re hiding from someone. Confess, what did you do to offend someone in the city?’

‘Nothing happened. I’m living a good life in the city,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing’s loud voice startled Dou Dou and he choked on milk. She put Dou Dou’s milk bottle on the coffee table and she gently patted his back.

‘Since you were a child you had a stubborn mouth. Even if I beat you to death you wouldn’t confess. I’m certain you hit someone severe enough to send them to the hospital and that’s why you ran home to hide. I’m going to call Lang Lang,’ Mrs Gu said.

‘You can’t call him! Mum, there’s no need for you to call him!’ Gu Jing said.

Mrs Gu put the bowl of onions on the coffee table and she lifted the startled Dou Dou into her arms. She patted his back and she glared at her daughter. ‘Look at how worked up you are, I’m certain you did something wrong.’

‘I didn’t!’ Gu Jing said. She saw Dou Dou’s scared eyes and she calmed down. ‘I told you a month ago I’ll be coming home to visit you and dad. If I did something wrong why did I wait until now to come home and hide?’

‘Um. That makes sense,’ Mrs Gu said. She passed Dou Dou to her daughter. ‘Look after Dou Dou. I need to cook.’

Dou Dou hugged Gu Jing’s neck. He laughed and he dribbled milk on her neck.

Gu Jing grabbed a tissue and she wiped milk off Dou Dou’s mouth. ‘What are you dribbling for? If you dribble on aunty again then aunty won’t hug you.’

Dou Dou laughed and gurgled.

Gu Jing carried Dou Dou to the kitchen. ‘Mum, later I’m going to visit master then I’ll visit aunty and uncle Zhen.’

‘Ok,’ Mrs Gu said.

Later that day Gu Jing stood outside master’s Taekwondo training venue. She looked inside the venue at the memorabilia and photos on the walls and she felt nostalgic.

Gu Jing saw master held up a kick pad in front of one of his young pupils.

‘Kick higher with more force like your big sister-’ master said.

‘Like big sister Gu Jing!’ a chorus of young pupils said.

Master coughed. ‘It’s good you all know. Continue training.’

A little pupil pulled the sleeve of master’s V-neck jacket. ‘Master, you say big sister Gu Jing is your best pupil but why haven’t I seen big sister Gu Jing come



and visit you?’

‘Um. Everyone here shouldn’t be unfilial like big sister Gu Jing,’ master said.

Gu Jing laughed and she entered the venue. ‘Master tomorrow I wanted to treat you to a dinner. But I didn’t know master hated me this much, I think it’s best if I leave.’

Gu Jing stood in front of master and she bowed. ‘Master, I haven’t seen you for a year and you look chubbier. I’m certain you haven’t been training.’

Master scoffed. ‘One year? Last New Year’s Day I took a group of my pupils to compete in a tournament. I came back after the tournament and I found two bottles of wine, but the person who gave them to me disappeared.’

‘Ok master, it’s been two years,’ Gu Jing said.

Master waved his young pupils to gather around him and Gu Jing. ‘This is your big sister Gu Jing. Let’s see which one of you can defeat your big sister Gu Jing.’

Gu Jing saw master’s troop of young pupils looked like obedient oxen prepared to battle. She laughed and she ran around the venue away from master’s troop. ‘Old man, I’m not treating you wine today.’

‘As long as someone can defeat big sister Gu Jing then tomorrow no one needs to train,’ master said sternly.

Gu Jing ran around in circles away from master’s troop. ‘Old man, you ambushed me!’

Master laughed. ‘That year I ran many miles to catch you. Is it because you’re older you can’t run anymore?’

Gu Jing laughed. She ran fast and slow to avoid being captured by master’s troop.

Master watched little girl Gu Jing ran around crazily like in the past and he smiled. He felt the little girl was still the lively monkey he chased that year to get her to be his pupil.

Master remembered that year he wanted to hand pick a group of young pupils suitable for Taekwondo training. He searched for children from the third grade and higher. He found a few children to be his pupils, but they didn’t meet his

expectations.

Master remembered that fateful day clearly. He saw a handsome little boy who looked like a doll was chased by a group of boys bigger than the little boy, but the cold calmness in the little boy's eyes startled him.

Master expected the little boy was going to be beaten by the group of bigger boys, but suddenly the little boy cried out. 'Gu Jing! They want to fight!'

Another little boy jumped down from a tree like a monkey. The little monkey jumped around, kicked the bigger boys' stomachs and hit their cheeks.

The little boy stood nearby the little monkey and the little boy calmly instructed the little monkey where to kick and hit the bigger boys. 'Kick higher. Don't hit their cheeks, hit their noses.'

Master was shocked to see such a young little boy could anticipate their opponents' moves and the lively little monkey's natural powerful physical strength.

Within a blink of an eye the defeated group of seven of eight bigger boys ran away and the little monkey stuck its bottom out.

Master couldn't believe his eyes, the little monkey was a little girl!

The little girl rubbed her nose and she held the little boy's hand. 'Today I want a lollipop.'

The little boy laughed happily and the cold calmness in the little boy's eyes disappeared. The little boy opened his school bag. He took out a lollipop and he gave it to the little girl. 'Let's go home.'

Master was deeply moved and he worried the little boy and the little girl would disappear. So he ran toward them, but the little boy saw him from a distance. 'Gu Jing, run!'

The little girl put her lollipop in her mouth and she ran. The little boy calmly stayed in one spot.

When master stood five steps from the little boy, the little boy took two steps back. 'Mr, you are whose dad?'

'Master... master is a teacher,' master said.

The little boy didn't say anything and the little girl who ran for a short distance turned around and she scrutinised master.

‘Are you actually a teacher?’ the little boy asked.

‘Master is a martial arts teacher, I teach Taekwondo. If you follow master and train hard then perhaps you can become a Taekwondo champion. Can you tell me your name? Is the little girl over there named Gu Jing? Can you ask her to come back for me to take a closer look at her?’ master said.

Master stood two steps in front of the little boy and the little boy smiled like an angel. But the little angel suddenly screamed like a little demon and the scream spread to the elementary school. ‘Teachers! Principal! There is a bad man who wants to kidnap children! Ah! Ah! Ah!’

Master couldn't believe despite his fame in the martial arts world and many parents knocked on his door and begged him to train their children, he was surrounded by an elementary school's teachers and principal. The little boy glanced at him and smiled and the little girl bit the same lollipop then they escaped together.

Gu Jing ran around the venue three times. The master's troop were breathless but she breathed steadily. ‘Hey old man, today you have a class. I won't treat you to wine today. What do you think about me treating you wine tomorrow night?’

Gu Jing's voice broke master's thoughts about past memories.

Master laughed. ‘Just you? Did Zhen Lang come home too? Are you two going to treat me wine tomorrow?’

Gu Jing's body froze and the master's troop jumped onto her. She fell on the ground and more than a dozen little children sat on her.

‘Old man, if you mention his name again then I will cut all ties with you!’ Gu Jing said.

Master laughed. He thought it had been more than ten years since he met Gu Jing and Zhen Lang, but nothing changed.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirty-Five

***Related***

# Thirty-Six

## Chapter Thirty-Six

Gu Jing trained with master's troop and the frustrations she had over three days flew away.

Gu Jing wiped the sweat off her forehead. 'Old man, tomorrow night I'll be back. I'll bring two strong bottles of wine. Master, can you still drink?'

Master scoffed. 'Little girl, we'll see who can still drink.'

Gu Jing waved bye to master and his troop and she walked home.

Gu Jing's family home was actually Zhen Lang's family home too.

Since that year Gu Jing's mum and Zhen Lang's mum met, their mums got along and loved each other like sworn sisters. She and Zhen Lang ate at each other's homes often.

Afterward Gu Jing's parents and Zhen Lang's parents bought a double storey house together. Gu Jing's family lived on the ground floor and Zhen Lang's family lived on the upper floor.

Gu Jing asked her parents not to tell Zhen Lang's parents she visited her parents for the last three days. But she missed Zhen Lang's parents so she decided to go upstairs and visit them.

On the way home Gu Jing bought Zhen Lang's parents' favourite dishes. She arrived home and she saw her mum take out the trash.

'Little girl, come here I want to tell you something,' Mrs Gu said.

'I'm visiting aunty and uncle Zhen. You can tell me later tonight,' Gu Jing said.

'Come here now. I have something important to tell you,' Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing waved the bag of food in front of her mum. 'Mum, I'm going upstairs.'

Mrs Gu walked to her front door and she slammed the door shut.

Gu Jing walked upstairs and she rang the doorbell.

'I'm coming,' Mr Zhen said.

Gu Jing hummed and she waited for uncle Zhen. The front door opened and she smiled. 'Uncle Zhen, guess what I brought for you-'

Gu Jing couldn't believe Zhen Lang opened the front door.

'I assumed you won't allowed to come upstairs. My parents said you came home for three days but they didn't see your face. My parents are heartbroken,' Zhen Lang said.

In that moment Gu Jing regretted she couldn't slap her cheeks, because she didn't listen to her mum before she visited aunty and uncle Zhen.

'Why are you here?' Gu Jing asked.

'I have work leave mid-year and I wanted to visit my parents. Are you going to tell me if you're home then I'm not allowed to come home?' Zhen Lang said.

On the inside Gu Jing cursed Zhen Lang – 'What mid-year work leave? As if I don't know your work schedule is the busiest mid-year!'

Zhen Lang guessed Gu Jing's thoughts and he laughed. 'My stomach's condition has been poor. Didn't you know my supervisor approved for me to take two days off to rest?'

After Gu Jing gave the two bowls of congee to Zhen Lang and Lin Tu Shen, she packed her suitcases and she ran to her parents' home. She didn't expect Zhen Lang's body would recover fast enough to visit his parents three days after eating her congee.

Gu Jing scoffed. 'Didn't the bowl of congee kill you?'

Zhen Lang laughed. 'It tasted delicious, but if you want to kill me next time remember to add arsenic.'

'I will. Next time I'll remember to add rat poison too,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang whispered in Gu Jing's ear. 'We haven't see each other for three days. Did you miss me?'

Gu Jing laughed and she fisted her hands. 'Um. I missed you to death!'

'Then shouldn't you hug and kiss me to show how much you missed me?' Zhen Lang asked. His thumb caressed Gu Jing's lips. 'Right now, I don't mind if you

show me how much you missed me.'

Gu Jing put a fist in front of Zhen Lang's face. 'Do you want to kiss this?'

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing's wrist. He carried the bag of food she brought and he led her inside his parents' home. 'Dad, little girl brought your favourite dishes.'

'Little girl, you're here. Later we can eat it together,' Mr Zhen said.

Gu Jing pushed Zhen Lang away from her and she took off her shoes. 'Uncle Zhen and aunty Zhen, I missed you both to death.'

'If you missed us to death why did you wait three days to visit us?' Mrs Zhen asked.

Mrs Zhen waved her hand for Gu Jing to come sit on the sofa.

Gu Jing obediently sat on the sofa and she hugged aunty Zhen.

Mr Zhen looked inside the bag of food Gu Jing brought and he smiled. 'Little girl understands what uncle loves most. If Lang Lang didn't say you needed to rest then I would have dragged you outside to find food.'

'Uncle Zhen I wanted to thank you for-' Gu Jing said.

'Uncle and aunty the food is ready,' Chen Wei said.

Chen Wei brought plates of food onto the dining table.

'Chen Wei?' Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing saw Chen Wei stood next to Zhen Lang and her heart felt strange.

'Why aren't sitting here? The food is here,' Zhen Lang said. He set the bowls and chopsticks on the dining table. 'You're lucky you get to eat Chen Wei's cooking. If you came two days earlier then you could have ate my mum's cooking too.'

Gu Jing shivered. Gu Jing suspected she and Zhen Lang were switched at birth, because her cooking skills resembled his mum's cooking skills. She understood why Zhen Lang and his dad were master chefs, because they wanted to save their stomachs.

Gu Jing sat at the dining table and she thought Chen Wei's shyness added to Chen Wei's beauty.

‘If you’re hungry then eat. You don’t need to drool,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Can you blame me? I’m a professional photographer, it’s a natural reflex when I see a beautiful girl. If Chen Wei lets me take a photo of her, I won’t charge her for my services,’ Gu Jing said.

Chen Wei laughed politely and she silently ate dinner.

‘Little girl, Lang Lang said you were sick. Is it true?’ Mrs Zhen asked.

‘Little girl knows how to be sick?’ Mr Zhen asked.

Mrs Zhen sighed. ‘Are you overworked? Tomorrow come here and aunty will make soup for you.’

Gu Jing realised the main difference between hers and aunty Zhen’s cooking was that she knew she couldn’t cook whereas aunty Zhen didn’t know about her lack of cooking skills.

Apart from Chen Wei and Mrs Zhen, everyone else’s faces turned bleach white.

‘Aunty Zhen, tomorrow I promised to eat with master,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Oh,’ Mrs Zhen said.

Mr Zhen saw his wife looked disappointed. ‘Little girl, come over the day after tomorrow.’

Gu Jing didn’t dare decline and she nodded her head.

Mr Zhen looked at his wife. ‘But... the master chef doesn’t need to appear in the kitchen. Tell me what soup you want to make and I’ll make it for little girl.’

Gu Jing’s stomach silently thanked uncle Zhen. But aunty Zhen gave her a different kind of bomb.

Mrs Zhen looked at her son and Chen Wei. ‘The day after tomorrow? Isn’t Lang Lang and Chen Wei going to the Department of Registry the day after tomorrow?’

Gu Jing looked suspiciously at Zhen Lang and the braised rib fell from her chopsticks to her bowl.

‘That’s right,’ Zhen Lang said. He glanced at Gu Jing. ‘We came here to go there together. I have a busy work schedule and after everything is done here I’ll



go back to the city.'

'Can't you stay an extra two days?' Mrs Zhen asked.

Mr Zhen put his bowl down. 'Lang Lang, stay another three days.'

'Ok, three days,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing didn't understand why her heart felt strange. She thought about why Zhen Lang and Chen Wei wanted to go together to the Department of Registry. But there was only one reason why an unwed man and woman wanted to go together to the Department of Registry.

'Mum, later remember to give me our family birth records,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing's assumptions were right. She didn't expect only three days ago Zhen Lang and Chen Wei reunited after many years of separation, but they wanted to marry each other the day after tomorrow.

'That's good news. Finally I don't need to regret about the past,' Gu Jing said.

'What do you regret about the past?' Chen Wei asked.

Gu Jing wanted to apologise about the past, but Zhen Lang kicked her leg under the table.

Zhen Lang dropped his chopsticks. 'Can you pick up my chopsticks for me?'

On the inside Gu Jing cursed Zhen Lang – 'Don't you know how to use your arms to pick up your own chopsticks?'

Gu Jing reluctantly picked up Zhen Lang's chopsticks he dropped next to her feet.

'Thank you,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang's hot hand brushed Gu Jing's hand. She let go of the chopsticks. 'I'm full. Uncle Zhen, I'll go slice watermelon for you.'

Zhen Lang wrapped an arm around Gu Jing's shoulders. 'You barely touched your dinner. Do you want to upset my mum?'

Gu Jing glared at Zhen Lang then she buried her head in her bowl and ate. Usually his dad's braised ribs were one of her favourite dishes. But she didn't know why she had trouble swallowing the braised ribs.

Gu Jing managed to eat a whole bowl of food. 'I'm full. Uncle I'll go-'

Zhen Lang hand squeezed Gu Jing's shoulder. 'You ate one whole bowl of food too quickly, which means you're still hungry. You should eat another bowl of food.'

'You...' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing didn't want to upset aunty Zhen. She silently ate a second bowl of rice and the only thought in her head was Zhen Lang was going to marry Chen Wei the day after tomorrow.

'See your hunger muddled your head, you only ate a second bowl of rice and forgot to put food into your bowl,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing didn't say anything. She picked up the watermelon on the dining table and she walked to the kitchen. She picked up a knife, she stared at the watermelon and she cackled. She chopped the watermelon in half and she felt some tension left her body.

'Why do I feel like you chopped my head off?' Zhen Lang asked. His hand caressed Gu Jing's back. 'What's wrong? Are you unhappy about something?'

'It's nothing,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing picked up the plate of watermelon slices and she turned around to walk back to the dining room.

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing's wrist. 'I thought if I teased you then you would be angry at me. I didn't think it would make you unhappy like this...'

Gu Jing realised there was no need for her to be unhappy.

Zhen Lang inched his face closer to Gu Jing's face. 'Are you certain it's nothing?'

'Of course it's nothing...' Gu Jing said in a choked voice. She laughed softly. 'I truly hope in this lifetime you can't have a wife and you can't have children.'

Gu Jing carried the plate of watermelon toward the dining room. Her head spun and she felt different kinds of bitter inside her heart.

Gu Jing reminded herself that year she broke up Zhen Lang and Chen Wei. But

the day after tomorrow Zhen Lang would marry Chen Wei then she could let go of the guilt she buried in her heart. She chanted inside her head that she should be happy.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirty-Six

***Related***

# Thirty-Seven

## Chapter Thirty-Seven

Master opened the front door of his house. 'I knew you came home with the little girl, but I didn't think you'll visit me.'

Zhen Lang gave boxes of herbal medicine. 'Did you actually think I wouldn't visit you?'

Master accepted the herbal medicine and he scoffed. 'You only know how to make others miserable. Even your gifts aren't as carefree as the little girl's gifts.'

'You're getting older, you should cut back on the alcohol. Master you have an old injury and the herbal medicine are nutritious for you. You'll feel refreshed during summer and warm during winter so every year will be comfortable for you,' Zhen Lang said.

'You're too noisy. You're a doctor but you only know how to lecture people. My body is in good condition. I don't need nutritious herbal medicine. In the future you can't give me these kind of gifts otherwise I'll curse you,' master said affectionately.

'I brought ingredients to cook dishes suitable for drinking so master show me a face that's easier on the eyes,' Zhen Lang said.

Master helped Zhen Lang carry the bags of food inside and he sighed. 'You only brought food. Where's the alcohol?'

'Later isn't she bringing alcohol for you? Then it's good that I brought food,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang walked toward the kitchen. He saw kick pads, gloves and mats scattered in the living room. 'Master you haven't changed your habit of giving your best pupils private training classes at home.'

Master unpacked the ingredients on the kitchen bench. 'Hehe... I want to see if I can train pupils to become future champions. I knew you and the little girl are coming here tonight. Let me cook you two a delicious dinner.'

Master held a knife but his hand trembled.

Zhen Lang gently took the knife from master. 'Let me cook for master. I want master to taste my cooking.'

Master nodded his head and he smiled.

Zhen Lang washed and chopped the vegetables. 'Master come visit me soon in the city. I want to help you find a good nurse to take good care of your old injury.'

'It's a waste of time. I'm ok, it's not necessary,' master said.

'Then I want master to listen to my advice as your doctor,' Zhen Lang said. He put the knife down on the kitchen bench. 'Master, there are other martial arts teachers who can substitute you for a few days.'

'Little boy, why are such a bad little boy? You were like this since you were a little boy and you haven't changed as an adult. I don't blame the little girl for hating you,' master said.

Zhen Lang smiled. 'The two of you are stubborn like each other. Impulsive like each other and think like each other. I'm happy to chase her. But why do I need to chase master too? I'm giving master a month to visit me otherwise I'll write a letter to the principal.'

'Do you believe me if I say I'll give you beating?' master asked.

Zhen Lang laughed. 'Indeed like master like pupil. You two speak like each other too. Master's precious darling pupil says she'll give me a beating several times a day. Master do you think it's an effective threat?'

Master wanted curse and tear of his handsome pupil's face.

'If my precious darling pupil threatens to give you a beating every day then it shows she still hates you. She resents you for preventing her from trying out on the national taekwondo team. You deserve her resentment because you made me separate from my precious darling pupil too early. If you didn't then my precious darling pupil will be the most famous martial arts athlete in the world,' master said.

'I don't need her to be famous or rich. It's enough for me to see her healthy

and lively. Back then we had an agreement. If she gets an injury then I won't agree for her to compete in tournaments anymore,' Zhen Lang said.

'Where is the little girl's injury? I did a good job protecting the little girl. You only know how to play around,' master said.

'Master don't you know about her old ankle injury? Back then she broke her ankle during a tournament. Everyone knew after she broke her ankle she didn't rest and she continued to train,' Zhen Lang said.

'That's a common injury. If she rests for a period then her ankle will heal,' master said.

'But the point is she refuses to rest. Also master wanted her to enter the national team. If she's on the national team then she would have competed in fiercer and gruelling matches. She's reckless and unpredictable. Everyone knows what will happen if she continued on that path so what I did wasn't playing around,' Zhen Lang said. He didn't hold back. 'She knows she doesn't need to be famous. She's happy to be lively and active. I didn't want her to be too impulsive and reckless in her younger years, because she'd regret it as an adult. Master look at her now, isn't it good she's like a boiling pot?'

'By not letting the little girl then-' master said.

Gu Jing knocked on the front door. 'Stinky old man, I brought good strong wine for master. Open the door.'

Master laughed and he ran to open the front door. 'Stinky pupil!'

'Stinky old man!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing gave master two bottles of wine. 'Master keep these two bottles of wine for yourself to drink. I brought a carton of beer too. Later we can drink beer together.'

'Little girl, are you scared I'll drink too much and faint?' master asked.

Gu Jing laughed. 'I'm scared master will drink too much and master can't tell the difference between sky and ground. Master you're getting old, don't turn into a corpse.'

'Show me your moves!' master said.

‘I’m not scared of you. I’ll show you my moves!’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang heard master and Gu Jing’s loud commotion and he shook his head helplessly in the kitchen.

Gu Jing attacked master for a while. ‘Hey old man, how’s your old injury? It seems like you’re holding back.’

Master scoffed. ‘I’m going easy on you because you’re my pupil. I’m scared you’ll faint if I attack you using my real strength.’

Gu Jing retrieved her leg and she sat on the floor. ‘Old man, if your arm is in bad condition then come to the city with me. I’ll ask Mr Vet to find you two good specialists and I’ll pay for master’s treatments.’

‘Mr Vet?’ master asked.

‘Mr Vet is Zhen Lang. Back then master said he’s a pretty face but a black belly. Master’s right, back then he’s a black belly and now he’s still a black belly,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Back then you two were close. Now why are you gritting your teeth talking about him? But he’s a black belly. On the outside he looks easy to bully but he’s a dangerous bad person,’ master said.

Gu Jing opened the carton of beer. She passed a can of beer to master and she took out a can of beer for herself. ‘He’s not a complete black belly. At least he doesn’t pee on the streets, he’s not an alcoholic, he’s not a playboy, he’s not a gambler, he knows how to cook, he knows how to save money, he knows how to do housework, he’s a hard worker, he’s handsome-’

‘Little girl you know a lot about the little boy. The way you talk about him sounds like you’re choosing a husband,’ master said.

‘Of course I know him. I’ve seen him since he’s a little boy. I even know how many hair strands he has on his chest,’ Gu Jing said.

‘How many?’ master asked.

Gu Jing laughed. ‘Guess, if master guess the wrong number then you need to drink beer. Master, you can guess how many times you want.’

Gu Jing thought about Zhen Lang in his bathrobe and his chest looked more

beautifully sculpted than a girl's chest.

Gu Jing shook her head to get rid of her smile. She didn't want to think about the hateful Zhen Lang.

Master scratched his head and he spoke loudly. 'Little boy, how many hair strands do you have on your chest?'

Zhen Lang brought bowls of hot dishes to the dining room. 'What do I get if I tell master how many strands of hair I have on my chest?'

Gu Jing's hands trembled and she nearly dropped the can of beer in her hand. 'Why are you here?'

'Taste the dinner dishes and tell if it's delicious,' Zhen Lang said.

'Did you add poison? First tell me why you're here. Master is my teacher, master isn't close to you,' Gu Jing said.

Master drank a can of beer. 'We're close. Who says we're not-'

'In the past I used to wait for you while you trained. Master watched me grow up too. Of course we're close,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang exchanged a secret look with master whilst Gu Jing nodded her head and she ate dinner.

'Mr Vet, help master find specialists for his old arm injury,' Gu Jing said.

Master rotated his arms. 'Master is healthy, it's not necessary.'

Gu Jing and Zhen Lang raised their eyebrows and they stared at master's arms.

Master picked up a pair of chopsticks, he ate dinner and he didn't dare to refuse treatments for his old arm injury.

'Where's a good spot to sit?' Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang wiped food stains off the corner of Gu Jing's mouth. She moved her face away from his hand, but his hand brushed her hot cheeks.

'Mr Vet, you can choose to sit anywhere,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing reasoned by the morning, Zhen Lang would be married so she wouldn't need to put up with him anymore.



‘Ok, I’ll think about it,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang cooked and cleaned the whole night. Whilst Gu Jing and master drank, ate, sang and laughed merrily.

Zhen Lang picked up the empty beer cans and he put them in the recycling bin. He saw Gu Jing and master rolled around on the floor and he sighed. He pulled Gu Jing off the floor. ‘Little girl, let’s go home.’

‘Um,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing drank too much and she felt tipsy. She waved bye to master and she followed Zhen Lang home.

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing’s hand and he led her home. The moonlight lit the long road home.

‘How long has it been since we walked home together like this? More than ten years?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘Since you sabotaged my chances to try out for the national team,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Don’t you mean since you secretly received my love letters from other girls and ate their gifts? Then you didn’t dare to face me, right?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘More like since you told the school girls if they play with me then they’ll fall in love with me. It’s your fault I didn’t have any girlfriends to play with at school,’ Gu Jing said.

‘You didn’t have school girlfriends because you told them if they come near me then you would give them a beating. It’s your fault you became their enemy,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘My threats were aimed at the school boys. It’s your fault school girls misunderstood me,’ Gu Jing said.

‘You used my name to write love letters to the school girls. It’s your fault the school girls hovered around me,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘You promised me that you belonged to me. It’s your fault for attracting the school girls and you broke your promise to me,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing felt like the beers she drank made the two decades of memories she shared with Zhen Lang clearer in her head.

‘What about you? You promised you’ll marry me but you ran away,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing scoffed. ‘At least I’m not bad like you. It’s only been a few days and you found someone else. You’re a stallion!’

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing’s shoulders and he pressed her back against a wall outside their home. ‘Stallion? Did you call me a stallion?’

‘Of course you’re a stallion!’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang kissed Gu Jing for a long time and she felt like her body melted.

After Gu Jing regained her senses she didn’t see Zhen Lang outside their home. But what he said to her after he kissed her echoed in her head – ‘I consider this as a deposit for me to find specialists for master’s old arm injury.’

Gu Jing rubbed her lips and she fisted her hands. She cursed Zhen Lang – ‘You black belly! Chen Wei marrying you is a waste!’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirty-Seven

***Related***

# Thirty-Eight

## Chapter Thirty-Eight

In the morning Gu Jing laid in bed and she stared at the ceiling.

Gu Jing couldn't believe she stayed awake all night.

Gu Jing rubbed the spots on her lips where Zhen Lang bit. She remembered the look of frustration and reluctance in his eyes before he let her go.

Gu Jing hit her head against her pillow and she cursed the hateful Zhen Lang – 'You dare kiss me when you're marrying someone else!'

Gu Jing didn't want to think about anything, she only wanted to sleep.

Gu Jing wrapped the bedsheet around her body and she rolled on the bed. But she felt like snakes slid on her body and she couldn't sleep.

Mrs Gu carried Dou Dou and a bundle of scallions into her daughter's room. She pulled the bedsheet off her daughter.

'Mum, what is it?' Gu Jing asked.

Mrs Gu knocked her daughter's head with the bundle of scallions. 'Wake up, you got work to do.'

'Mum, today do you want me to knead dough, wash herbs or mince the meat?' Gu Jing asked.

'I'm busy today. I need you to take Dou Dou for his scheduled vaccination,' Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing got out of bed and her mum passed her Dou Dou. She hugged him and she kissed his cheek.

Gu Jing carried Dou Dou to the bathroom, she quickly brushed her teeth and washed her face. Then she put an adorable little hat on top of Dou Dou's head and she carried him to the town's hospital.

At the hospital a doctor injected a vaccine into Dou Dou's arm and Dou Dou cried loudly. Gu Jing carried Dou Dou outside, she hugged him and she wiped

tears and snot off his face.

Gu Jing patted Dou Dou's back. 'Be good, don't cry anymore. Auntie will give a lollipop for you.'

Dou Dou saw Gu Jing opened a lollipop wrapper and he stopped crying.

Gu Jing waved the lollipop in front of Dou Dou's face. His little hands grabbed her hand and he licked the lollipop.

Gu Jing looked for a rubbish bin. She didn't see a rubbish bin instead she saw the Department of Registry building.

Gu Jing carried Dou Dou to a bench near the front of the Department of Registry building. She sat on the bench and Dou Dou sat on her lap. She held the lollipop for him to lick and occasionally she gave him sips of his water bottle she kept in her pants pocket.

'After you're done eating your lollipop we'll go home. At home remember to cry loudly for your great-aunt to hear. She'll love you to death,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing squeezed Dou Dou's cheek. She held Dou Dou on her lap and her eyes focused on the newlyweds and the newly divorced couples who walked out of the Department of Registry building.

Suddenly Gu Jing saw Zhen Lang who wore an ash grey suit walked out of a car. The same car that Chen Wei stepped out of. Chen Wei wore a beautiful light pink dress. She thought they looked like a stunning couple and their smiles blinded her eyes.

Gu Jing watched Zhen Lang and Chen Wei walked together into the Department of Registry building. Immediately she stood and she carried Dou Dou into the same building.

Inside the building Dou Dou's curious eyes looked at the people who lined up to register births, marriages and deaths. He also looked at the people who lined up for authentication services. But Gu Jing's eyes only looked at Zhen Lang.

Gu Jing saw Chen Wei stood next to Zhen Lang at a counter. She saw Chen Wei took out a family birth record and Chen Wei used it to fill out a form.

Gu Jing didn't want Zhen Lang to marry Chen Wei. Zhen Lang played her for

more than twenty years. Last night he even kissed her but he wanted to marry someone else.

Gu Jing heard the angel and demoness voices battled inside her heart. The angel voice faded and the demoness voice chanted loudly inside her heart – ‘You need to prank him one more time! Make him lose his dignity one more time! Make him be embarrassed in public one more time!’

Gu Jing felt like an invisible hand pushed her and Dou Dou forward until they stood behind Zhen Lang and Chen Wei.

Zhen Lang glanced at the form Chen Wei filled out then he turned his head around and he saw Gu Jing.

Zhen Lang saw Dou Dou pulled Gu Jing’s wrinkled shirt stained with chocolate and saliva. Under her shirt she wore baggy pants and sandals.

Zhen Lang’s eyes shone brightly and he smiled. ‘Why are you here?’

‘I...’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing saw everyone in the room looked at Zhen Lang. Everywhere she went with Zhen Lang, people would always notice Zhen Lang. She realised she made a public spectacle of herself instead of Zhen Lang.

Gu Jing knew it was too late for her to retreat. She put Dou Dou on the counter and she lifted her chin. ‘You came here with her?’

Gu Jing didn’t wait for Zhen Lang to answer and she spoke loudly. ‘You came here with her! What am I supposed to do?’

Suddenly the room became silent. Even the couple who were about to divorce stopped their argument and they listened to Gu Jing’s loud and clear voice.

‘Didn’t you promise to marry me? Didn’t you say you’ll buy me a diamond ring? It’s only been a week since you made those promises to me, but today you brought her here. Can you say in front of baby that you didn’t make those promises to me?’ Gu Jing said.

‘In front of baby?’ Zhen Lang asked. He looked at Dou Dou who sat on the counter. Dou Dou’s curious eyes looked at him and Dou Dou kicked little legs. ‘You brought baby here to find me?’

‘That’s right!’ Gu Jing said. Her heart rejoiced because she had anticipated the same question Zhen Lang asked her. But on the outside she pretended to look like a jilted lover. ‘If I didn’t bring baby to the hospital for a vaccination then I wouldn’t know you brought another woman here. You lied to me and played with my heart. Tell me, in the future what will happen to me and baby?’

Everyone in the room were angry at Zhen Lang’s despicable behaviour.

‘What a playboy! He has a baby with his lover but he’s marrying another woman. Looks are deceiving. He looks like a decent man but he likes to play with another person’s heart,’ an angry mob of people said.

‘My husband is lazy but at least he’s a faithful man,’ a woman who wanted a divorce said.

‘That’s right. Your lover is too soft hearted. If it was my wife she would force you to marry your lover and take responsibility,’ a man who wanted a divorce said.

The woman stood next to Gu Jing and she patted Gu Jing’s shoulder. ‘Little sister, listen to big sister. You need to demand your lover to take responsibility.’

Gu Jing grabbed Chen Wei’s hand and she pointed a finger at Zhen Lang. ‘Chen Wei, he’s a bad man. You shouldn’t believe him. He played with my heart. He’s a playboy, fickle and deceitful.’

Gu Jing realised she looked like a real jilted lover, because a bigger crowd of people which included employees surrounded her.

Dou Dou innocently clapped his hands and he dribbled.

Gu Jing lowered her head and she pretended to sniff. ‘He and I know each other for more than twenty years and we lived together for many of those years. I know what sort of man he is the most.’

Gu Jing knew she didn’t lie. She did know Zhen Lang for more than twenty years and they lived together under the same roof for many years. He did promise to marry her and buy her a diamond ring.

Gu Jing pretended to rub tears off the corner of her eyes and she secretly glanced at Zhen Lang.

Gu Jing saw the calm look on Zhen Lang's face and on the inside she fumed. She recognised what that calm look on his face meant, if events didn't fall within his plans then he wouldn't be calm.

Chen Wei held up her form. 'Wait. Gu Jing, it's a misunderstanding. Zhen Lang and I-'

Zhen Lang put a hand up in front of Chen Wei's face to stop her from talking.

Zhen Lang looked at Gu Jing. 'Anything else?'

Zhen Lang's intense eyes intimidated Gu Jing. 'You... you-'

Zhen Lang gave Gu Jing a warning look. 'What do you want to say? Just say everything you want to say.'

'Hey, how can you be like this? You didn't wipe your mouth clean after eating junk food, you have no sense of responsibility but you dare to intimidate your lover? You look like a rich man. But just because you're rich doesn't mean you can play with another person's heart. If you dare intimidate your lover again, I'll beat you to death,' the man said.

'A handsome and rich man like him is indeed a bad playboy. You should beat him to death,' the woman said.

Gu Jing heard everyone wrongly accused Zhen Lang and she felt guilty that her prank went overboard. She looked at Zhen Lang and she saw his scary smile. She took a few steps back and she wanted to escape.

Gu Jing lifted Dou Dou off the counter and she hugged him. 'I... I should go. You two should continue-'

The woman obstructed Gu Jing's escape route.

'Little sister, everyone here will be your witnesses. You should demand he takes responsibility,' the woman said.

The woman looked at Chen Wei. 'You dare to marry a man like this? If you marry him, later he'll acknowledge his son and force you to be a good step-mum to his son.'

Gu Jing realised it was too late for her to escape, because everyone surrounded her and Zhen Lang.

‘How do you want me to take responsibility?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘Mmm...’ Gu Jing mumbled.

Gu Jing only wanted to stop Zhen Lang from marrying Chen Wei. But she couldn’t think of anything that he needed to take responsibility for.

Gu Jing put up a shaky hand in front of Zhen Lang. ‘You don’t need to take responsibility.’

‘He needs to take responsibility! Demand him to marry you! He needs to acknowledge his son!’ the man said.

‘If you’re his wife even if you divorce him you’ll get half of his assets. You’ll be in a better position than you are in now. Look at the state you’re in. Baggy clothes and scandals. He’s wearing a tailored suit. You should demand him to pay child support,’ the woman said.

Gu Jing hugged Dou Dou and she felt pitiful as she looked on the outside.

Zhen Lang smiled. ‘Ok, I’ll take responsibility. We’ll register our marriage.’

Gu Jing pressed her back against the counter. ‘What do you want to do?’

An employee behind the counter passed Gu Jing a form. ‘Here’s a marriage registration form.’

‘Wait! You can’t get married like this. He also needs to write down on the form like how much child support he’ll pay monthly as a guarantee for his wife,’ the man said. He pointed a finger at Zhen Lang. ‘What will you give your wife?’

Zhen Lang pretended to contemplate for a while. ‘I’ll give you all the money in my bank account, ok?’

‘Ok!’ the angry mob said.

‘I’ll transfer all my assets to you including my shares, ok?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘Ok!’ the angry mob said.

Zhen Lang picked up a pen and he wrote down everything he promised Gu Jing on their marriage registration form. Then he filled out the form for both of them and he put the pen down on the counter. ‘Ok, let’s register our marriage.’

That day a group of people witnessed a rare sighting of a rich man in a suit was



forced to marry a woman who wore wrinkled clothes.

Gu Jing didn't understand what happened, but suddenly a completed marriage registration form with only her signature absent was put on the counter in front of her.

'I... I can't get married because I didn't bring my family birth record,' Gu Jing said.

'I brought your family birth record here,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing didn't get to ask Zhen Lang why he had her family birth record, because he wrapped an arm around her waist and he kissed her. She could only register his soft lips and hot tongue. Her body weakened. His kiss felt more intoxicating than alcohol and her soul floated on top of clouds.

Zhen Lang let go of Gu Jing. He saw the dreamy look in her eyes and he whispered in her ear. 'Sign your name.'

Zhen Lang kissed Gu Jing senseless so she carelessly picked up a pen and signed her name on the form in front of her.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirty-Eight

***Related***

# Thirty-Nine

## Chapter Thirty-Nine

Gu Jing stood in front of the Department of Registry building. The sunlight brought back her soul. But the bright red marriage certificate and wedding photo in her hand blinded her eyes.

Gu Jing remembered ten minutes ago she signed a form in front of a noisy crowd, five minutes ago the noisy crowd dragged her to a chair and a photographer took a photo of her and Zhen Lang.

Gu Jing looked pitifully at her other hand and her signature on a copy of hers and Zhen Lang's marriage registration form stared back at her. After more than twenty-five years of life, she realised in the eyes of the law she had to take responsibility for her signature.

Gu Jing looked closely at the wedding photo. In the wedding photo Zhen Lang looked handsome in a tailored suit, but she sat next to Zhen Lang in baggy clothes. She thought compared to past wedding photos taken at the Department of Registry, she looked like the scruffiest bride.

Gu Jing slapped her cheek and she berated herself for not prioritising her thoughts. She shouldn't be thinking about whether she looked beautiful and compatible with Zhen Lang in the wedding photo. It was more important for her to think of a way to annul the marriage.

'Is there a fly on your cheek?' Zhen Lang asked. He wrapped an arm around Gu Jing's shoulder. 'The car's on the left.'

'Um,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing pretended the marriage certificate, form and photo in her hands didn't exist and that nothing happened.

Zhen Lang laughed. 'You forgot something.'

Gu Jing patted her baggy clothes and she felt her wallet in her pants pocket. She didn't think she forgot anything, but the certificate, form and photo in her hands felt heavy.

‘I didn’t forget anything,’ Gu Jing said and she glared at her heavy hands.

‘Son, mummy doesn’t need you anymore,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing panicked and she looked frantically for Dou Dou. Finally she saw Dou Dou hugged Zhen Lang’s neck and Dou Dou happily pulled Zhen Lang’s shirt.

‘Give Dou Dou to me,’ Gu Jing said.

The moment Gu Jing’s hands touched Dou Dou’s arms, he pouted his lips, turned his back toward her and he clutched Zhen Lang’s neck.

Zhen Lang’s arm moved down Gu Jing’s back and he wrapped his arm around her waist. ‘Let me hold Dou Dou.’

‘That’s right, it’s rare for a playboy to willingly change. Let him take responsibility for his wife and son. Let him bond with his son,’ the woman said.

‘It’s good to see him bonding with his son. A good man is someone who is responsible. It looks like my wife and I did a good deed,’ the man said.

Gu Jing turned her head around and her face twitched. ‘You’re both still here?’

‘Looking at you two newlyweds make me happier than I was on my wedding day,’ the woman said.

Gu Jing couldn’t believe the married couple who were going to divorce stayed married and hugged each other.

‘Wife, let’s not divorce, ok?’ the man asked.

‘Then will you give me your bank card and all your assets including shares?’ the woman asked.

‘If I have anything in my bank account or any assets I’ll give it to you immediately. But at the moment I don’t have anything,’ the man said.

Gu Jing looked at the happy married couple and she cringed.

‘Wife, let’s go home,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing shivered and she felt like her body was thrown on top of a snowy mountain. She felt the heavens didn’t own eyes, because the heavens allowed her to marry the jinx.

Gu Jing grabbed Zhen Lang's shirt collar and she held up the certificate, form and photo. 'How do I annul a marriage?'

'Annul?' the man and woman asked loud enough to pierce Gu Jing's eardrums.

'Ok. Then Mr Vet, how do we get a divorce?' Gu Jing said.

'Divorce?' the man and woman asked louder.

Zhen Lang pretended to look pitifully at Gu Jing. 'Are you joking? Now that you're holding my home, land, bank card and shares in your hands, you want to dump me? You're not loyal woman.'

'That's right! You're not a loyal woman!' the man and woman cried out.

'I... I'm not holding your bank card,' Gu Jing said softly.

Zhen Lang took out his wallet and he tucked his money and his silver bank card into Gu Jing's hand. 'It's yours.'

'Can't you see he's remorseful? If you can't forgive now, you can be angry with him for a little while. But divorce isn't a joke,' the woman said.

'That's right. You've only been married to him for ten minutes, you shouldn't be thinking about divorce. You two should hurry up and hold hands then go home and be happy together,' the man said.

Gu Jing couldn't believe the married couple turned on her and she didn't know where their support for her disappeared. The married couple changed to Zhen Lang's side. She could only glare at Zhen Lang and wait for a private opportunity to give Zhen Lang a beating.

'Wife...' Zhen Lang called. He hugged Gu Jing. 'Shouldn't we find a good restaurant to celebrate our wedding day?'

Gu Jing forced herself to smile and she sat inside Zhen Lang's car with Dou Dou. The married couple waved and they looked enviously at her and Zhen Lang.

Zhen Lang parked in front a classy restaurant. He carried Dou Dou and he held Gu Jing's hand. 'Let's go and eat.'

'Only a monster would celebrate a wedding day with you,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang smiled. 'It's lunch time, let's eat lunch.'

In that moment Gu Jing didn't want to be together with Zhen Lang for another second. 'I want to go home and eat.'

'Ok. Let's go home and tell my parents, my dad-in-law and mum-in-law the good news,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing silently opened the passenger door and she walked outside the car.

Gu Jing worried if her parents and Zhen Lang's parents found out they were married then she couldn't dump Zhen Lang for the rest of her life. She was determined to get Zhen Lang to divorce her without neither of their parents' knowledge.

Gu Jing smiled sweetly. 'Let's go and eat, my treat.'

Zhen Lang lifted Gu Jing's chin and he smiled. 'It's only right if you let me pay for our first meal together as husband and wife.'

Gu Jing didn't want to make a big deal about who would pay for lunch. She strode into the restaurant, she sat at a table and she silently waited for the waiters to bring lunch dishes to her table.

The waiters quickly brought lunch dishes onto Gu Jing's table. She buried her head in her bowl and she ate the lunch dishes. On the inside she resented everything that happened during the whole day.

'The way you eat is scarier than how children eat,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing lifted her head and she realised Zhen Lang held a bowl of soup and a spoon in his hands. She watched him feed Dou Dou, who sat in a high chair for children next to him. They looked like a pristine father and son. But she was a messy eater with rice stuck on her baggy clothes.

Gu Jing put her chopsticks down on the table. 'Why did you ambush me? Don't think that I don't know what you did.'

Zhen Lang blew on the spoon of soup and he carefully fed Dou Dou. 'I didn't.'

'I don't believe you!' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang put the spoon onto a clean plate. 'I truly didn't.'

'Then why did you deceived me about going together with Chen Wei to the

Department of Registry?’ Gu Jing asked.

‘Chen Wei bought a small apartment here. As her former classmate, shouldn’t I help her? There are authentication services at the Department of Registry too,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Then why do you need to bring your family birth record? If you were helping her to authenticate property ownership then why did you two need to line up to register a marriage?’ Gu Jing asked.

‘After we moved to the city we didn’t update our family birth records. My mum-in-law said she’s busy and she asked me to update your family birth record for you. Of course I can grant my mum-in-law’s small request. As for Chen Wei, she isn’t married. To prove she’s not married and is the sole owner of her small apartment, she needed authentication documents that shows she’s not married,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing felt another thunder bolt struck her head and she fumed.

‘If she has no relations with you, why would she buy a small apartment here?’ Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing didn’t believe Zhen Lang and Chen Wei were only former classmates, because Chen Wei travelled a thousand miles to buy a small apartment in a small country town. She suspected Zhen Lang and Chen Wei were lovers.

Zhen Lang choked. He coughed and he wiped the corner of his eyes. ‘Don’t you remember Chen Wei’s classroom was next to our classroom in our senior year? Didn’t you know Chen Wei was born here?’

‘In our senior year, all the school girls were deceived by you. I focused on training, why would I pay attention to where she’s born?’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing didn’t remember the school girls in her own class let alone the school girls in another class. But she still wanted to hear a proper explanation from Zhen Lang.

‘Then why did she show up at your parent’s home?’ Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang wiped Dou Dou’s mouth. He lifted Dou Dou and he hugged Dou Dou. Then he gently patted Dou Dou’s back. ‘Because I agreed to be her

guarantee that she's not married, she came to my parents' home to thank me. Afterward my parents asked her to stay for dinner.'

'She cooked dinner at your house!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing didn't believe Chen Wei was only a guest, because Chen Wei cooked the dinner dishes!

Dou Dou burped and Zhen Lang put Dou Dou back into the high chair.

'She learned how to cook foreign dishes while she lived overseas. She told my parents she wanted them to taste new flavour combinations. You know my parents' curiosity is like a child's curiosity so of course they let her cook whatever foreign dishes she wanted,' Zhen Lang said.

'Are you saying everything is a coincidence?' Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing didn't understand why the heavens wanted to play with her by giving her a fate full of suffering.

'No...' Zhen Lang said. He shook a finger in front of Gu Jing's face. 'Everything that happened is called live by the sword, die by the sword.'

Gu Jing realised everything happened because of her own actions. If she didn't prank Zhen Lang and stopped him from marrying someone else then she wouldn't implicate herself.

Zhen Lang picked up his bowl and he happily ate the lunch dishes left on the table. Everything tasted delicious to him like he tasted food for the first time.

'Mr Vet, can we make a compromise about our marriage?' Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing felt like she sat on hot coals and in her eyes were anticipation. She struggled to patiently wait for Zhen Lang to finish eating.

The moment Zhen Lang put his chopsticks down, Gu Jing prompted him. 'Compromise...'

Zhen Lang wiped his mouth. 'I'm happy to make any compromises with you about our marriage. But I'm not going to divorce in this lifetime.'

Gu Jing felt like her last hope disappeared.

'If you want to dump me then why are you holding all my assets in your

hands?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing quickly gave the marriage documentation and Zhen Lang's bank card back to Zhen Lang. 'I'm giving everything back to you.'

Zhen Lang glanced at Gu Jing's hands but he didn't take back anything from her hands. 'Anything that leaves the door has no way to retreat.'

Gu Jing understood Zhen Lang meant if he entered her household then he had no intention of leaving her household.

'But... we're truly not compatible,' Gu Jing said.

'Not compatible? Is it hard for you to look at my face?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing shook her head, because she thought if Zhen Lang's face was considered hard to look at then ninety-nine percent of the male population would be sent to the zoo.

'Am I poor?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing shook her head, because if Zhen Lang was considered poor then rich emperors didn't exist in the past.

'Do I know how to do housework?' Zhen Lang asked.

'Of course you know how to do housework!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing thought anything Zhen Lang cooked was delicious, he kept his home clean and tidy and she felt he ranked first class as a househusband.

'Do I have any bad addictions?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing knew Zhen Lang was the definition of self-control, moderation and sternness. Gu Jing shook her head to the point her head spun.

'Do you think I can take good care of children?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing glanced at Dou Dou who happily played in the high chair and she nodded her head.

'Do you think I'll be a good husband?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing realised she couldn't deny Zhen Lang would be a good husband. 'It seems like you'll be a good husband.'



‘Then it’s settled,’ Zhen Lang said. He waved a waiter over to pay the bill. Then he patted Gu Jing’s arm. ‘Wife, let’s live a good life together.’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirty-Nine

***Related***

# Forty

## Chapter Forty

Zhen Lang parked his car in front of his parents and in-law's home.

Gu Jing hugged Dou Dou and she felt no joy at the sight of Zhen Lang's parents and her parents' home.

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing's shoulders. 'Wait, why are you in a rush?'

'What is it? Do you want to kiss me good bye?' Gu Jing asked sarcastically.

'If my wife volunteers to kiss me good bye then it'll make me happy and scared,' Zhen Lang said. He got out of the car and he opened the passenger door for his wife. 'Wife welcome home.'

Gu Jing realised since she picked up a pen and signed her name on the marriage registration form, Zhen Lang's smile never disappeared and it crept her out of her mind.

Gu Jing only wanted to distance herself from Zhen Lang. She was determined to seize the first opportunity to flee.

'Are you certain you want to go inside like this?' Zhen Lang asked. He pointed at his and Gu Jing's marriage documentation inside a pink box. 'You want my mum-in-law to see?'

Gu Jing's shaky hand grabbed Zhen Lang's shirt and she tucked the pink box inside one of the pockets of his jacket. 'We're a good sworn brother and sister pair. You need to be an honorable man so you can't tell our parents.'

'We can't keep this kind of big news from our parents. It's better if we directly tell our parents,' Zhen Lang said.

'No!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing knew if her parents and Zhen Lang's parents find out they were married then she could never leave Zhen Lang's imprisonment. She wanted to wait for the day Zhen Lang regretted marrying her and he would give back her freedom.

‘About this, shouldn’t we prepare our parents mentally first? If we suddenly spring the news on them, I’m scared it’ll be hard for our parents to accept-’ Gu Jing said.

‘This is good news, not bad news. Why wouldn’t they accept it? It’ll make them happy,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Didn’t you say you’ll listen to your wife? Then I don’t want you to tell our parents, because I want to tell our parents myself,’ Gu Jing said.

In that moment Gu Jing took advantage of her new status. ‘You can’t expose this news to them.’

Zhen Lang pouted his lips. ‘But wife, are you really not going to acknowledge my status?’

Gu Jing didn’t know who to cry to, because Zhen Lang sulked in front of her. She fumed and she glared at Zhen Lang. ‘I don’t care, you promise you’ll listen to me.’

‘Then there needs to be a set time frame. Three months! I’m only giving you three months to tell our parents. After three months if you don’t tell our parents then I will,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing exhaled gently and she nodded her head.

Gu Jing thought within three months she would find a way to force Zhen Lang to divorce her.

‘If I have to bear an injustice then shouldn’t you compensate me?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang inched closer to Gu Jing, and she hugged Dou Dou tighter.

‘What compensation do you want?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘We’re husband and wife. What else do you think I would want? Of course I want you to honor your wifely duties,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing took a deep breath. ‘Ok, later we’ll live together in the city.’

Zhen Lang kept silent and he waited for his wife to continue.

‘I’ll do all the housework chores that I know how to do,’ Gu Jing said. She was

used to being threatened by Zhen Lang for years, and housework didn't faze her anymore. 'I'll sweep the floors, clean the toilet and wash clothes.'

'Apart from housework, what else will you do to compensate me?' Zhen Lang asked.

'What else?' Gu Jing asked. She contemplated for a while. 'I'll wake you up in the morning and I'll make you coffee. I'll pick you up after work, I won't hit you, I won't curse you and I won't threaten you.'

'Continue,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing's head spun. She felt her suffering surpassed a maid's suffering from an ancient dynasty period and she couldn't believe Zhen Lang still wasn't satisfied. 'What else do you want? Do you want me to kneel at the front door and welcome you home?'

Zhen Lang smiled. 'You don't need to kneel at the front door to welcome me home. Think about it, we're husband and wife. What other wifely duties are there?'

Gu Jing puffed her cheeks. 'I already promised you everything. What else do you want?'

'Do you actually think sweeping the floors and washing clothes are a wife's main duties?' Zhen Lang asked.

'What else is there?' Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang lifted his wife's chin. 'I want to share the same bed and pillow with you. I want us to interlock like a fish's scales and our bodies attached to each other, understand?'

Of course Gu Jing understood what a fish's scales interlocking and what her body attached to Zhen Lang's body meant. She never thought about her and Zhen Lang in bed together before. But she couldn't deny Zhen Lang had a good body and it felt good to rub his body which was more comfortable than a pillow.

'You're truly twisted. We're good friends. How can you think about this?' Gu Jing asked.

'I'm a man too. I'm a healthy young man who has natural manly urges,' Zhen

Lang said.

‘No. You’re not allowed to even think about this,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing carried Dou Dou toward her parents’ home and she didn’t glanced back at Zhen Lang.

Zhen Lang leaned against his car. He put his hand in one of his pants pockets and his hand fiddled with a box. But his eyes followed his wife and he smiled.

Zhen Lang waited until he couldn’t see his wife and Dou Dou before he locked his car and he followed his wife inside her parents’ home.

The moment Gu Jing carried Dou Dou into her parents’ home, her mum increased her frustrations.

‘I asked you to take Dou Dou to get vaccinated, but why did you run wild outside? Do you know what time it is?’ Mrs Gu asked.

‘I...’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing resented she couldn’t say anything to defend herself. But her heart was moved to see the worry look on her mum’s face, except she realised her mum worried about Dou Dou when her mum lifted Dou Dou from her arms.

‘Dou Dou be good, let your great-aunt look at where the doctor injected the vaccine on you. Does it still hurt?’ Mrs Gu said.

Gu Jing felt her mum’s words sounded like a heartless cold wind that blew away her moved heart.

‘Mum, why didn’t you ask me if I’m ok?’ Gu Jing asked. She felt she sounded like a child who competed for her mum’s affections. ‘Aren’t you worried if I was robbed or assaulted?’

‘Robbed?’ Mrs Gu asked. She stroked Dou Dou’s face and she didn’t glance once at her daughter. ‘Who can defeat you in a fight? Why would someone assault you? Even if they have eyes that can see they wouldn’t take notice of your looks and target you.’

Gu Jing felt like her suspected adoptive mum’s words knocked out her self-esteem. She silently took off her shoes and she absorbed herself in self-pity on the sofa.

If Gu Jing knew the reception her mum would give her at home then she wouldn't visit her parents' home. She felt it was better to stay in the city, take photos and eat. Even if she had to live together with Zhen Lang, it was better than living in her parents' home because at least Zhen Lang cooked her delicious dishes.

Gu Jing heard someone pressed the front door bell. She jumped off the sofa and she walked to the front door. She opened the front door and she saw the jinx who received a new status as her husband.

'Why are you here?' Gu Jing asked softly.

Gu Jing put up her guard. She wanted to close the front door and lock her new husband outside.

Zhen Lang pushed the front door open. 'Did you buy a new phone?'

Gu Jing shook her head. Since the lake incident she was too busy to buy a new phone in the city. When she visited her parents' home she cooped herself inside her parents' home so she forgot to buy a new phone.

Zhen Lang waved a box in front of his wife's face. 'I bought you a new phone. Do you want to take a look?'

Gu Jing saw the photo of the phone on the box and her eyes lit up. 'Give it to me and let me see.'

Zhen Lang moved the box back and forth between his wife's cheeks until she lost her balance and fell onto his chest, because she couldn't grab the box in his hands.

Gu Jing finally stole the box from Zhen Lang but she was too happy to notice he wrapped an arm around her waist.

'Let's go inside and you can inspect your new phone, ok?' Zhen Lang whispered in his wife's ear.

'Um,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing opened the box and she took out her new phone.

Zhen Lang closed the front door and he dragged his wife to the sofa.

On the sofa Zhen Lang watched his wife happily fiddle with her new phone. 'You were drooling while you watched me read the newspaper, is it this phone that made you drool?'

'Um. I wanted to buy this phone in the city, but I took work leave to visit my parents and I didn't get to buy it earlier. It's your fault my phone broke so it's only right if you replace my phone that you broke,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing focused on her new phone that she didn't realise she sat on Zhen Lang's lap and he wrapped his arms around her waist.

'Ok,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang propped his chin on his wife's shoulder and he helped her inspect her new phone.

'But...' Gu Jing said. She turned her head to face Zhen Lang and she looked suspiciously at him. 'Let me see your new phone.'

'I don't have a new phone,' Zhen Lang denied.

'Give it to me,' Gu Jing said. She pulled Zhen Lang's shirt out of his pants and she searched his body. 'I'm certain you're hiding your new phone. I've known you for many years and I understand you best.'

Zhen Lang let his wife searched his body. 'Is that true?'

After a while Gu Jing took out Zhen Lang's new phone that he hid in his shirt pocket and she laughed triumphantly. 'I knew you hid your new phone from me.'

'What are you looking at?' Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang customized his phone number caller ID on his wife's sim card.

'I'm looking at you for daring to keep a silver phone for yourself and giving a black phone to me,' Gu Jing said. She scoffed and she quickly took out Zhen Lang's phone battery. 'Switch. I want the silver phone and you can have the black phone.'

Zhen Lang laughed helplessly. 'Ok, let's switch. But after we switch phones, you need to forgive me.'

Zhen Lang wanted his wife to forgive him for trapping her for two days to

marry him. But his oblivious wife focused on taking out his sim card and putting it into the black phone. Then she inserted her sim card into the silver phone.

‘Are you going to reward me?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘Reward?’ Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing lifted her head and she cried out loud enough for her mum to hear her in the kitchen. ‘Mum, tonight’s Zhen Lang is eating dinner here. Save the chicken legs for him.’

‘Lang Lang’s here? Did you update the family birth records yet?’ Mrs Gu asked loudly from the kitchen.

Zhen Lang laughed cryptically. ‘It’s updated.’

‘Then little girl, put it back in my bedroom for me,’ Mrs Gu said loudly.

Zhen Lang’s wife put her family birth record back inside her parents’ bedroom. Whilst he sat on the sofa and he looked at the photo he set as the black phone’s screen display. The photo he set was of a young beautiful woman’s hand covered half of her naked chest, her startled eyes matched the innocence of her snow white bare back and her short hair above her shoulders showed off her sensual slender neck.

Zhen Lang looked in the direction of his wife’s parent’s bedroom and he whispered lovingly. ‘Wife, I know you best. You always want to compete with me.’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Forty

***Related***



# Forty-One

## Chapter Forty-One

The Zhen and Gu households reunited for dinner at the Gu household's home.

Mrs Zhen always loved Gu Jing as her own daughter. She put the last chicken leg into Gu Jing's bowl. 'Little girl, eat the chicken leg you love most.'

'Thank you aunty Zhen,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing and Zhen Lang secretly exchanged a look with each other. She clearly understood why, because she promised to reward him chicken legs for dinner. She picked up the last chicken leg with her chopsticks and she put it into Zhen Lang's bowl. 'For you to eat.'

Gu Jing lowered her head and she ate two spoonful of rice. But suddenly the room became silent, she lifted her head and she realised her parents and Zhen Lang's parents looked shocked. Uncle Zhen held a braised rib between his chopsticks in mid-air like someone immobilized his vital acupuncture points.

Zhen Lang picked up the chicken leg his wife gave him and he bit a piece of chicken. His parents and his wife's parents' mouths were wide open and they looked back and forth between him and his wife.

Mrs Gu used a free finger to poke her husband's arm. 'Old man can you see? Little girl gave the chicken leg to someone else.'

Mr Gu's eyes were full of anticipation. 'I see. Little girl hasn't given anyone a chicken leg before, it's a strange phenomenon.'

Gu Jing's parents and Zhen Lang's parents' suspicious stares made Gu Jing worry so she carelessly stole the chicken leg from Zhen Lang's bowl and she bit a piece of chicken. 'Before I didn't see clearly, I'm eating the chicken leg now.'

'Little girl, Zhen Lang bit into the chicken leg already,' Mrs Zhen said.

Gu Jing panicked, she didn't know if she should eat the chicken leg or not. She looked at the four pairs of suspicious eyes and her chopsticks flew into Zhen Lang's bowl. 'For you.'

‘Um,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang calmly ate the chicken leg his wife put back into his bowl.

Mr Zhen recovered from shock the fastest. His son inherited calmness from him. He coughed softly. ‘How are you two getting along living together in the city?’

‘Good,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing silently buried her head into her bowl and ate.

‘I think you two are getting along good too,’ Mr Zhen said. He smiled brightly. ‘In the past little girl never gave anyone food before and you never ate food given by someone else. It’s only been a short few months since I saw you two, but you two changed a lot.’

Gu Jing choked on rice. She covered her mouth and coughed. She looked pleadingly at Zhen Lang. ‘We haven’t changed.’

Gu Jing spoke too fast and she carelessly bit her lips. She took a deep breath, her teeth released her lips and she endured the pain.

Gu Jing didn’t dare to lift her head from her bowl and look into the four pairs of suspicious eyes.

Zhen Lang continued to eat like nothing happened. ‘Since we were children weren’t we always close and caring toward each other?’

Mr and Mrs Zhen and Mr and Mrs Gu contemplated for a while then four heads nodded together.

Gu Jing covered her mouth and she licked her painful lips. She looked pitifully at Zhen Lang who sat opposite her. Zhen Lang’s eyes were calm and her parents smiled affectionately at Zhen Lang without glancing once in her direction.

Gu Jing silently ate her bowl of rice and on the inside she cursed the jinx because he ate dinner dishes with pain free lips. She fiercely ate the rice like they were the jinx’s calm eyes.

‘Did everyone check the updated family birth records?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing put her bowl and chopsticks down on the dining table. ‘Zhen Lang!

You...'

Gu Jing fumed because Zhen Lang promised her that he wouldn't tell their parents but he broke his promise.

Mrs Gu glared at her rude daughter. 'Little girl, what are you saying? You're being rude.'

Gu Jing saw her parents and Zhen Lang's parents shocked faces and she swallowed what she wanted to say. 'I...'

Zhen Lang passed his empty bowl to his wife. 'Are you eating another bowl of rice? Then can you scoop a bowl of rice for me too? Thank you.'

Mrs Gu smiled affectionately at Zhen Lang. 'I don't need to check the family records you updated. I trust you updated them responsibly like the same way you're always responsible. It's only updating addresses, what is there for me to check?'

Gu Jing felt her soul that flew away returned to her body. She looked at Zhen Lang's empty bowl in front of her and she reluctantly scooped him another bowl of rice. But on the inside she cursed Zhen Lang for threatening her with their family birth records.

Gu Jing wanted to dump the bowl or rice on top of Zhen Lang's head, but she endured her frustrations and she silently continued to eat her bowl or rice. On the inside she cursed Zhen Lang for making her panic as if she saw a gust of wind about to sweep her away.

'Big sister, Mrs Zhang's daughter gave me wedding invitations to give to you and big brother. The wedding is next week,' Mrs Gu said with the look of envy in hers.

'Little sister, last month Mrs Li's daughter-in-law gave birth to Mrs Li's first grandchild, a loveable chubby grandson,' Mrs Zhen said.

'Even Mr Sun's son whose face isn't easy on the eyes has a girlfriend. Two days ago he bumped into me and he introduced his girlfriend, she's a pretty little girl,' Mr Gu said.

'Don't worry, my future daughter-in-law will be more beautiful than his

girlfriend,' Mr Zhen said.

Mrs Gu sighed and she shook her head. 'What a pity about my daughter. I don't know if anyone will look in my daughter's direction. If someone does look at her they'll be scared off by her androgynous looks.'

'Who says no one wants me?' Gu Jing said. She slammed her bowl of rice onto the dining table. 'What's the big deal about getting married? I...'

Zhen Lang's eyes lit up. Gu Jing realised she almost risked her life and she swallowed her words.

'I'm full,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing swayed to her bedroom and she collapsed on the bed. She feared for her life because she nearly confessed at the dining table that she was aunty Zhen and uncle Zhen's new daughter-in-law. She felt the situation at her parents' home was too dangerous. If she spat out another two words she feared she would die without a burial place for her corpse. She blamed everything on the jinx, if it wasn't for him then she wouldn't be in such a pitiful situation.

'Little girl, wash the dishes!' Mrs Gu said loudly from the living room.

'Yes mum!' Gu Jing said but she lazily laid on the bed.

Gu Jing hit her head against her pillow. She couldn't believe she gave Zhen Lang the opportunity to give her grief for the rest of her life. She berated herself for signing the marriage registration form. She reasoned when she signed the form she was either possessed or Zhen Lang poisoned her. She wanted to be as far away as possible from Zhen Lang.

Gu Jing heard footsteps but she didn't lift her head from her pillow. 'I'm about to wash the dishes, you don't need to nag me.'

Gu Jing felt a familiar hand on her shoulder. She lifted her head and she saw the jinx.

'Before you didn't eat much, are you hungry?' Zhen Lang asked.

On the inside Gu Jing cursed the jinx – 'What can I eat? My lips hurt to death!'

Gu Jing glared at the jinx but her tongue didn't move.

Zhen Lang laid on the bed beside his wife. He put a hand on his wife's cheek and his free thumb gently caressed her lips. 'Before you looked like you bit your lips. Does it hurt? Let me see, ok?'

Zhen Lang's wife inched closer to him. She lifted her head and she looked like a little kitten who was bullied. His thumb continued to gently caress her lips. 'Little fool, why did you bite your lips this hard?'

On the inside Gu Jing felt frustrated because if it wasn't the jinx's fault then she wouldn't carelessly bite her lips. She licked her injured lips and she took a deep breath.

Zhen Lang wrapped an arm around his wife's waist and he whispered in her ear. 'Little fool, if it hurts then don't lick. Be careful you'll get an infection. Do you want me to go upstairs and get a bottle of iodine?'

Gu Jing shook her head and she laid her head on Zhen Lang's chest. Her ears focused on his heart beats and she felt safe.

'I have a way to make your pain go away. Do you want to try it once?' Zhen Lang whispered in his wife's ear.

Gu Jing felt a bit sleepy. She wanted to close her eyes, but she was more curious about Zhen Lang's remedy to soothe her painful lips. Suddenly she felt Zhen Lang's soft lips gently kissed her lips like a bee playing with a flower's pollen.

Gu Jing's lips felt a little itchy but Zhen Lang's gentle kiss numbed the pain on her lips. She wanted to avoid his lips but his hand reacted faster. He pressed his hand behind her neck and he gently nibbled on her lips. Unlike in the past, he didn't kiss her roughly and consumed her senses straight away. He kissed her gently and he slowly lit her flame of desire.

Gu Jing's senses were clear. She felt each of Zhen Lang's lips' gentle movements and she also felt her lips trembled on his lips. She closed her eyes. She felt his throat swallow her taste and she heard his soothing heart beats. She felt like she had no control over her arms that wrapped around his waist and pulled his body closer to her body. She felt his breath became hotter and his tongue intruded inside her mouth.

Gu Jing only heard Zhen Lang's heart beats clearly. She couldn't control the way her body reacted to Zhen Lang's body. She felt his hand on her waist, his gentle kisses and the way his body burned her body.

Gu Jing wanted to push Zhen Lang away from her, but she didn't expect her body wanted to be closer to Zhen Lang and it wanted to be enclosed by his flames. Her hands gripped the back of his shirt and she didn't feel satisfied enough. She secretly pulled his shirt up and she pressed her hands on his back skin.

Zhen Lang's body stiffened the moment he felt his wife's hands on his back skin. He gripped his wife's waist and he kissed her deeper.

At first Gu Jing's hands gently rubbed Zhen Lang's back skin, but later she didn't know why her hands gripped his back skin.

Suddenly Gu Jing's bedroom door flung open.

'Little girl, why aren't you washing the dishes?' Mrs Gu nagged.

In the emergency situation Gu Jing carelessly used her full strength to kick Zhen Lang off the bed. Then she saw her mum stepped into her room like an extinguisher that was about to put out a fire.

Mrs Gu saw her daughter looked breathless on the bed. 'What's wrong? Do you feel uncomfortable somewhere?'

'No!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing secretly glanced at Zhen Lang on the floor then she looked at her mum and her heart pounded wildly.

'No?' Mrs Gu asked.

Gu Jing saw her mum took another two steps closer to the bed. She held in her breath and her whole body shivered. She feared her mum would see Zhen Lang on the floor on the side of the bed furthest from her bedroom door if her mum stepped any closer to the bed.

Zhen Lang laid on the floor. One of his hands rubbed his sore back and his other hand covered his mouth to refrain his laughter after he saw his wife's body tensed. Then his wife secretly glanced at him, he blew her a kiss and he licked his

lips.

‘What are you looking at?’ Mrs Gu asked.

Gu Jing didn’t dare to breathe and she spoke in a choked voice. ‘Nothing...’

Mrs Gu put up a fist. ‘Why aren’t you washing dishes? How long do you want to procrastinate?’

Gu Jing sat up on the bed and she jumped over Zhen Lang’s body. She rushed to her mum. ‘I’ll go wash the dishes now-’

‘Wait,’ Mrs Gu said. She pointed at her daughter’s bare feet. ‘Where are your slippers?’

Gu Jing looked frantically around her bedroom but she didn’t see her slippers... she secretly glanced at Zhen Lang and she saw him lift his back and he pointed at her slippers under his back.

Gu Jing didn’t know how to grab her slippers without her mum seeing Zhen Lang in her bedroom.

‘Are you ready? The cards are dealt!’ Mr Gu said loudly from the living room.

‘I’m coming!’ Mrs Gu said. She glared at her daughter. ‘Go upstairs and bring uncle’s Lang’s favourite tea to the living room.’

‘Yes mum!’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing watched her mum walk out of her room and she exhaled gently.

Mrs Gu remembered something and she turned around to face her daughter. ‘Where’s Lang Lang?’

Gu Jing’s index finger pointed at the ceiling and she smiled sweetly. ‘Perhaps he’s upstairs.’

‘Um,’ Mrs Gu said and she walked to the living room.

Gu Jing’s body felt weak. She sat on the bed and her back felt cold.

‘I can’t stay here anymore, it’s too dangerous,’ Gu Jing mumbled softly to herself.

Gu Jing berated herself for almost exposing her secret marriage with Zhen

Lang at dinner and her mum almost caught her in bed with Zhen Lang. If she stayed for another two days then her secret marriage with Zhen Lang would be out in the open. Even though it was dangerous to live with Zhen Lang in the city, she felt it was better than facing her parents and Zhen Lang's parents.

Zhen Lang got off the floor and his sore back pressed against the bed. 'Next time you kick me that hard again, I'm scared you'll become an old widow.'

'Did I kick you? Do you want me to massage your body?' Gu Jing asked carelessly in her state of panic.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Forty-One

***Related***



# Forty-Two

## Chapter Forty-Two

Gu Jing's dad went to work and her mum took Dou Dou on an outing.

Gu Jing quickly put some of her belongings into her suitcase and she fled.

Gu Jing's life motto was flee first and explain later. After she returned to the city she would think of a good excuse to tell her parents why she suddenly left their home.

Outside Gu Jing's parents' home the sun shone brightly. Her phone alerted her that she received a text message. She took out her phone from her pants pocket. She read the text, narrowed her eyes and she gripped her phone – 'Wife, where are you? From your loving husband.'

Gu Jing fumed because Zhen Lang dared to customize her phone and changed his caller ID to a despicable name!

Gu Jing gritted her teeth and she tucked her phone inside her pants pocket. She pretended she never received that text message. She reasoned it was Zhen Lang's fault she had no one to lean on for support, why she worried her parents would find out too soon that she fled their home and why she worried she couldn't survive another dangerous day.

After her mum nearly caught her in bed with Zhen Lang, she feared she would eventually be caught each time she closed her eyes. Then she would be forced to live with Zhen Lang for the rest of her life. Zhen Lang would imprison her, bully her and force her to do housework like an ox and mule combined until death. It was her worst fear, which made her stay awake last night with a cold sweat.

Gu Jing dismissed Zhen Lang's text message because she wanted to run far away as possible from him. She checked that her surroundings were clear then she ran to the front gate of her parents' home.

The moment Gu Jing stepped outside of the front gate she heard a familiar laugh.

'Wife, it's almost time to eat dinner. Where are you going?' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing saw a neighbour walked passed them and she covered Zhen Lang's mouth with her free hand as fast as lightning. 'I told you that you can't call me by that name!'

Zhen Lang wrapped his arms around his wife's waist and he kissed her hand. Her hand let go of his mouth and she shook her hand like couldn't bear his touch.

Zhen Lang looked at the suitcase his wife carried. 'My love, where do you want to go?'

Gu Jing panicked. 'I... I'm going for a stroll.'

Zhen Lang smiled. 'Isn't it tiring to go for a stroll carrying a suitcase? Do you want me to carry your suitcase for you?'

Gu Jing hugged her suitcase and she frantically looked for an escape route. 'You don't need to.'

'Since you're going for a stroll and I need to buy a few items, why don't we take a stroll together?' Zhen Lang asked.

'I don't want to!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing only wanted to return to her life of freedom. She didn't want to stay anxiously at her parents' home and most of all she didn't want any association with Zhen Lang.

Zhen Lang held his wife's hand and she tried to pull her hand out of his hold.

'I'm not going with you. I have something I need to do,' Gu Jing said.

'Do you want to dawdle here until my mum and my mum-in-law return home? Before my mum and my mum-in-law left they said they'll be home at five in the afternoon. In another five minutes it'll be five. Are you coming with me or not?' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing feared her mum and aunty Zhen would see her and they would detain her.

Gu Jing smiled sweetly. 'Where are we going? Master Zhen, what do you want to buy? How can your maid serve you?'

Zhen Lang smiled helplessly and he led his wife to the taxi. 'Let's hurry up and go.'

On the way to the taxi Gu Jing realised he carried a suitcase in his free hand. She wanted to ask him why he carried a suitcase too, but he dragged her into the taxi and put their suitcases in the taxi's boot.

Inside the taxi Zhen Lang sat next to his wife and he calmly instructed the taxi driver. 'Airport.'

Zhen Lang saw the surprise look in his wife's eyes and he stroked her short hair. 'Little girl, is it because you can't stand it anymore and you want to run away?'

'Why would I run away? I'm going back to the city to work because the studio needs me,' Gu Jing denied.

'Oh? Then it's good you need to go back to the city too. In the morning I received a phone call from the hospital. The hospital asked me to come back for a new scheduled surgery,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing didn't believe Zhen Lang's excuse. She looked out the window and on the inside she cursed Zhen Lang.

The taxi driver parked the car in front of the airport. Gu Jing grabbed her suitcase and she ran toward the service desk. She wanted to ask an airport clerk if there was an available plane ticket to the city, but Zhen Lang wrapped an arm around her neck.

'What are you doing?' Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing wanted to give Zhen Lang a beating, but her loud voice attracted suspicious stares from the airport security guards.

'Let's go over there...' Zhen Lang said. He waved a document in front of his wife. 'And give this a try.'

'Hey! I didn't buy a ticket yet. What did you sign me up for?' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang ignored his wife's protests and he dragged her to the service desk. He took out money from her wallet and he gave the money and document to an airport clerk. The airport clerk gave him two plane tickets.

‘You knew I wanted to run away so in the morning you called a travel agency and reserved two plane tickets to the city, right?’ Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang smiled and he led his wife to one of the restaurants at the airport. ‘What do you want to eat?’

Gu Jing shook her head and she gripped Zhen Lang’s hand. ‘Confess, did you plan everything?’

‘Plan everything? Since you were a child if you did something wrong you’ll panic and worry someone else will find out. Then you’ll run away. Yesterday gave you a scare, of course today you’ll run away,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing scrunched her face. ‘I’m not running away. I’m going back to work.’

Zhen Lang pulled his wife closer to him. ‘Then what do you want to eat? My loving wife hasn’t eaten dinner yet, do you want to eat something light at the airport?’

Gu Jing glared at Zhen Lang. ‘I don’t want to! The food at the airport isn’t appetizing.’

Zhen Lang caressed his wife’s lips with his free thumb. ‘Then how about later we’ll eat a spicy dinner together at a restaurant in the city?’

Gu Jing’s eyes lit up and she nodded her head. There was no room left in her head to think about how she would return to the city with a new status as Zhen Lang’s wife or about her promise to fulfil her wifely duties.

On the plan Gu Jing slept on Zhen Lang’s shoulder and she dreamt about spicy meat and seafood.

Zhen Lang caressed the calluses on his wife’s fingers from years of training, but he knew his wife didn’t care about owning feminine fingers.

Zhen Lang lifted Gu Jing’s hand to his lips and he kissed her hand. She felt a strange itch and she stirred in her sleep.

‘Will it be inconvenient for you to wear a ring?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘Don’t even think about it. You’re not allowed to put anything on my fingers. Wearing a ring will be uncomfortable to death. How can I go to training classes wearing a ring?’ Gu Jing mumbled.

Zhen Lang wrapped an arm around his wife and his free hand held her hand. She moved her head to a more comfortable spot on his shoulder and she slept.

Zhen Lang silently watched his wife sleep for two hours.

After the plane landed at the city airport Zhen Lang pinched his wife's cheeks to wake her up. He poked her nose to shape her nose like a pig. 'Hurry up and wake up. If you're hungry then let's go eat a spicy dinner.'

'Um,' Gu Jing said. In her half awake and half asleep state she sneezed. 'Mr Vet, can we go home and shower first? I stink.'

Zhen Lang swept a finger down the bridge of his wife's nose. 'You're not hungry?'

Gu Jing blinked her eyes several times to wake up and she pouted her lips. 'I rather be hungry to death than stink to death.'

'Ok, I'll listen to everything you say,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang took Gu Jing home in a taxi. When she arrived home she rushed to the bathroom and showered away her exhaustion and sleepiness.

Zhen Lang unpacked the suitcases in the living room. He sorted out his clothes and his wife's clothes then he hung their clothes in a cupboard in their bedroom.

Zhen Lang unpacked the pink box last. He opened the pink box and he saw a red marriage certificate, a form and photo. In the photo his wife sat next to him, she looked like a lost little fool. He stroked her foolish face in the photo and he smiled.

'Little fool, apart from you who else would I marry?' Zhen Lang mumbled softly to himself.

Zhen Lang held the photo, he sat on the sofa and he sighed.

'Ah!' Gu Jing cried out from the bathroom.

Zhen Lang jumped off the sofa. 'What's wrong?'

Gu Jing remembered she put her dirty clothes into the washing machine and there were no towels in the bathroom. 'Mr Vet, I forgot to put a clean outfit in the bathroom.'

Gu Jing heard Zhen Lang laughed softly. She opened the bathroom door from the inside and she saw an outfit hung on the coat hanger on the bathroom door handle outside. ‘Mr Vet, why did you give me this outfit?’

Gu Jing realised whenever Zhen Lang gave her an outfit it was always a dress. She wanted to ask him if he knew how uncomfortable it was to walk in a dress and heels. She preferred to wear pants and comfortable sneakers.

‘Then come outside and get the outfit you want to wear,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing reluctantly wore the dress. After Zhen Lang showered they walked to a nearby restaurant for a spicy dinner. Her body felt weak from hunger so she didn’t make a fuss about his arm wrapped around her waist.

‘Can I order spicy beef and seafood?’ Gu Jing asked.

‘Um,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Can I order spicy tofu?’ Gu Jing asked.

‘Um,’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘Mr Vet, I’m really hungry,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Hungry enough that you don’t want to move? Then I’ll piggyback you,’ Zhen Lang said.

Suddenly Zhen Lang stopped walking. Gu Jing turned her head around to look behind them and she frowned. She didn’t know when a group of men started to follow behind her and Zhen Lang. The group of men moved out of the shadows and they surrounded her and Zhen Lang.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Forty-Two

***Related***

# Forty-Three

## Chapter Forty-Three

Gu Jing stepped in front of Zhen Lang, but he pulled her behind him.

‘Gentlemen if you need money, I’ll give you money,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang opened his wallet and he gave all his money to the group of men.

‘Gentleman, think of it as me treating you dinner,’ Zhen Lang said.

The group of men were surprised to see the few thousand Yuan that Zhen Lang gave them and they looked at Zhen Lang’s neck.

Zhen Lang unbuttoned his shirt collar. ‘We don’t have any jewellery on us.’

The leader of the group of men smacked Zhen Lang’s money on his palm and he looked at Zhen Lang. ‘Little boy, looks like you know what’s good for you. You can leave.’

Zhen Lang wrapped his arm around his wife’s waist and they took one step out of the alley street.

‘Wait,’ the leader said. He stood in front of Zhen Lang and he looked over Zhen Lang’s shoulder at Gu Jing. ‘I said you can leave, but I didn’t say she can leave.’

Zhen Lang glared coldly at the group of men and they took two steps back away from Zhen Lang.

‘Little boy, honestly we just want to find the little Miss Gu. This has nothing to do with you. Considering your generosity before I don’t want to trouble you. If you know what’s good for you then you should disappear. Right now isn’t the time to play the hero,’ the leader said.

‘Little Miss Gu? Gentlemen, it appears you’re not here out of greed,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘We’ve waited here for a few days for her to show up. Finally we can fulfil our contract,’ the leader said.

The group of men stepped toward Zhen Lang and Gu Jing.

‘Our target is the little girl. You better leave otherwise today you’ll be crippled,’ the leader threatened.

‘Why don’t you demonstrate how to disappear?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘Do you want to die?’ the leader asked.

‘Who’s dead? I can’t see clearly, show me where,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘You’ll see clearly soon,’ the leader said.

Another man stepped in front of the leader and he aimed an iron pipe at Zhen Lang’s head. Zhen Lang pushed Gu Jing back, but she aimed a leg at the man’s stomach and the sides of her dress ripped into two slits. Then in a blink of an eye Zhen Lang kicked the man’s stomach. The man and his pipe fell onto the ground.

Zhen Lang’s powerful kick shocked the group of men. They underestimated the couple in front of them.

‘You...’ Gu Jing said.

The man Gu Jing thought she knew for more than twenty years felt like a stranger to her. Zhen Lang’s one kick was faster and more powerful than any of her kicks in the past.

Zhen Lang looked over his wife’s shoulder. ‘Behind you.’

Gu Jing snapped out of her shock. She kicked and punched the man behind her. The man dropped his iron pipe, held his head and he groaned in pain on the ground.

Zhen Lang turned around, he pulled his wife behind him and he kicked another man who aimed an iron pipe at her head. The man flew to the back of the alley way.

‘Be careful, this isn’t a tournament match,’ Zhen Lang warned his wife.

Gu Jing knew Zhen Lang was right. These group of men weren’t her competitors in a tournament match who needed to abide by tournament rules. They were contract killers with iron pipes in their hands.

Gu Jing’s attacks were fast and strong, but Zhen Lang’s attacks were faster and stronger.



Gu Jing and Zhen Lang protected each other's backs. There was no time for her to ask him when he learned martial arts. She focused on the men who stood in front of her with iron pipes.

'Attack the little girl,' the leader ordered.

The men left standing stepped toward Gu Jing and they aimed their iron pipes at her head.

Gu Jing kicked another man's elbow and the iron pipe fell out of his hand. She kicked his stomach and the man fell onto the ground. The man's uninjured hand gripped his broken elbow.

Gu Jing picked up the man with the broken elbow's iron pipe and she broke it in half with her hands.

Gu Jing kicked another man to the ground, but someone else charged toward her with an iron pipe. There was no time for her to avoid the man who charged toward her and she mentally prepared her body to be hit.

Suddenly Zhen Lang punched the man who charged at Gu Jing. She saw Zhen Lang's powerful and accurate punch left a fist imprint on the man's stomach.

Gu Jing kicked another man between his legs. She fought in a way that went against her martial arts training, but in that moment her only thought was to protect Zhen Lang and herself.

Gu Jing fought against ten men. Even though she was a highly trained martial arts athlete, her energy depleted after defeating ten men. She felt her attacks were slower and weaker.

Gu Jing breathed heavily and she watched Zhen Lang fight against another two men. Zhen Lang's attacks were smoother than water and surpassed her own attacks. Zhen Lang attacked the vulnerable spots of the two men's bodies and the two men flew outside the alley way.

There were only two men and the leader left standing, but they were scared of Zhen Lang. They dropped their iron pipes and they ran away from the alley way.

Zhen Lang turned around and he looked at his wife. 'Are you hurt?'

Gu Jing shook her head. 'You trained with the old man?'

In the past Gu Jing fought in many tournaments and she recognised each of her competitors' fighting styles that their martial arts teachers taught them. She knew Zhen Lang's fighting style was uncannily similar to hers, which meant they shared the same martial arts teacher. She also knew Zhen Lang's high level attacks and the accuracy of his attacks meant he trained with their master for many years. But she didn't know why she never knew Zhen Lang was a martial arts athlete too. She didn't expect someone as calm as Zhen Lang could fight fiercely and his attacks were strong as fire.

'I didn't want to train with the old man, it was the old man who wanted to train me and he didn't want to let me go,' Zhen Lang said. He wiped sweat off his wife's forehead and he assessed her body from top to bottom for any injuries. 'You know better than me how tenacious the old man is and how gruelling his training is.'

Gu Jing held Zhen Lang's hand and she pinched his cheek with her free hand. 'Are you Mr Vet? Or are you another soul who possessed Mr Vet's body?'

Zhen Lang held his wife's face and he smiled. 'You read too many ancient martial arts novels.'

'But...' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing didn't expect someone who she thought was a weakling for more than twenty years suddenly turned into a martial arts athlete in front of her eyes. She knew if Zhen Lang was part of national taekwondo team and he competed in the Olympics he would at least be ranked third in the world. She was shocked how good he hid his martial arts skills from her for many years... it was hard for her to accept.

In the past Gu Jing threatened to give Zhen Lang a beating many times, but she never used her real physical strength if she hit Zhen Lang. She realised there was no reason for her to hold back her real physical strength against Zhen Lang.

Zhen Lang could guess his wife's thoughts by the changes of her facial expressions. He saw her face muscles twitched and he worried about her old ankle injury. He wrapped an arm around her waist. 'The cops will be here soon. Do you need to rest?'

Gu Jing felt her old ankle injury resurfaced. Usually if she trained moderately

her old ankle injury didn't hinder her. But she overexerted herself during the fight with the contract killers, and she felt pain in her ankle. 'It feels like I fractured my ankle.'

'I'll take you to the hospital,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing leaned her head on Zhen Lang's shoulder and she focused on not putting pressure on her injured ankle. Suddenly when she lifted her head her eyes were blinded by a bright light that reflected off a weapon.

Then she saw Zhen Lang shielded her face with his arm, and a man struck Zhen Lang's arm with a knife. Zhen Lang kicked the man's chest. The man dropped the knife and the man fell on the ground, but the sirens of cop cars were heard so the man forced himself to get up from the ground and the man limped away from the alley way.

Gu Jing heard sirens and the footsteps of cops were near the alley way, but she was more concerned about Zhen Lang.

'Mr Vet, are you hurt?' Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing saw one of the white sleeves of Zhen Lang's shirt turned red. She gently held Zhen Lang's arm that shielded her face and she felt blood dripped down onto her hand.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Forty-Three

***Related***

# Forty-Four

## Chapter Forty-Four

At the emergency department of the hospital were cops dressed in black uniforms and doctors wore blue scrubs under white lab coats.

Inspector Sun ordered his team of cops to investigate the assault in the alley way.

Inspector Sun walked into the emergency department. He didn't know the identity of the young man who was brought into emergency with an arm injury, and why all the doctors and nurses were excessively concerned about the young man. He noticed the young woman who was brought into emergency with an ankle injury with the young man was waiting anxiously in emergency.

Gu Jing sat on a hospital bed in emergency. She remembered on the way to the hospital Zhen Lang comforted her and he could move his injured arm. But after they arrived at emergency she didn't see him anywhere and she panicked. She worried his arm injury was more serious than he led her to believe.

Inspector Sun asked the director of the orthopaedic department about the identity of the young man whilst the director examined the young woman's ankle injury.

'Of course they would be concerned. He's our best cardiothoracic surgeon. If his arm injury is serious then he can't pick up a scalpel and perform another surgery for the rest of his life,' the director said.

Gu Jing felt like someone stabbed her heart and she felt breathless but she continued to listen to the director and inspector Sun's conversation.

'If Doctor Zhen can't pick up a scalpel, not only does he lose the use of his arm but many patients' lives would be affected too,' the director said.

'Where is Zhen Lang? Where is he?' Gu Jing asked in a choked voice.

The longer Gu Jing didn't see Zhen Lang the more she worried that his arm injury was serious enough to be taken directly to the operating room.

Gu Jing jumped off the bed before the director could stop her, because she put too much pressure on her injured ankle she almost fell at the door. But a familiar arm wrapped around her waist and stopped her from falling.

‘Although I’m happy you miss me, but many people are looking at us and you’re making feel shy,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Zhen Lang...’ Gu Jing called. She looked at Zhen Lang’s right arm. ‘How is your right arm?’

Gu Jing saw Zhen Lang’s right shirt sleeve was stained with blood and her heart ached. It was the first time in her life that she deeply worried about someone’s health.

‘It’s a shallow injury,’ Zhen Lang said. He stroked his wife’s hair with his left hand and he whispered in her ear. ‘Didn’t I let you see it on the way here?’

‘But...’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing saw many doctors and nurses walked back and forth outside the door and she lowered her head.

‘They’re making a fuss over something minor. Are you worried about me?’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing didn’t say anything, but the director’s voice broke the tension.

‘Don’t be too happy too soon. Perhaps my hands put too much pressure on the little girl’s ankle so she tried to run away,’ the director said.

Zhen Lang led Gu Jing back to the bed. ‘Uncle Wan, I need to trouble you.’

The director looked at Gu Jing’s injured ankle then he looked at Zhen Lang’s injured arm. ‘Doctor Zhen do you want me to examine your right arm? The hospital chief called all the hospital departments’ directors for a meeting. But I’m exempt from the meeting and I have nothing to do. Since I’m here I may as well examine your right arm.’

‘Uncle Wan, my right arm is ok. Uncle Wan, examine her ankle first,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘I’m ok. Uncle, examine his right arm first,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing felt pain in her ankle but it was an old ankle injury and wasn't life threatening. But Zhen Lang's right arm needed to be examined and bandaged otherwise his right arm could get an infection and his arm injury would become serious.

'Uncle Wan can't examine my arm injury,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang saw his wife's anxious face and he gently held her chin with his left hand. 'Little fool, uncle Wan is an orthopaedic surgeon. My arm injury is shallow, of course he can't examine my arm injury.'

'Oh...' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing realised her anxiety about the seriousness of Zhen Lang's arm injury was pointless and she glared at Zhen Lang for giving her a scare.

'Ah!' Gu Jing cried out.

Gu Jing's attention was focused on Zhen Lang that she didn't notice the director put pressure on her injured ankle to assess her injury.

Zhen Lang hugged his wife. He saw her fierce glare and he couldn't hold back his laughter.

'Doctor Zhen, you need an arm cast,' a nurse said.

Zhen Lang kept his left arm wrapped around his wife's shoulder. 'Can I get an arm cast here?'

Gu Jing watched the nurse inject an anaesthetic into Zhen Lang's right arm and she forgot about her ankle pain.

Zhen Lang heard his wife took a deep breath. 'Does it hurt?'

Gu Jing shook her head and she looked at his right arm. 'You're hurt.'

Zhen Lang laughed. 'I'm not hurt. The anaesthetic numbs the pain.'

'Oh,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing felt the pain in her heart lessen a bit. She knew Zhen Lang for many years, but she never seen him injured. Each time she looked at the blood on his right arm she would remember the knife that struck his right arm and her heart would ache.

Zhen Lang saw his wife bit her lips and the panic in her eyes. He silently caressed her cheek with his left hand.

Gu Jing didn't cry out whilst the director put a cast around her injured ankle, but her hand gripped Zhen Lang's left shoulder and wrinkled his shirt.

Zhen Lang gently patted his wife's cheek. 'I'm going to change my clothes in my office otherwise I'll scare people in these clothes. Be good and wait here for me to come back.'

'You...' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing saw Zhen Lang's arm cast and she didn't want him to leave her sight.

'Don't worry,' Zhen Lang said. He lifted his right arm. 'My arm cast is beautiful.'

Gu Jing forced herself to smile, but her smile was scarier than tears.

Gu Jing watched Zhen Lang leave the room then she looked at the nurse. 'Is there anything wrong with his right arm?'

The nurse smiled politely. 'If there is something wrong with Doctor Zhen's right arm, do you think Doctor Sun would be so calm? Doctor Zhen's arm injury is shallow. It's lucky the knife didn't puncture any of his arteries or veins. If you want Doctor Zhen's right arm to heal faster then don't let him use his right arm excessively for a short period. But there'll be a scar on his right arm.'

The look in the nurse's eyes became dreamy. 'Doctor Zhen is so heroic. He's handsome, good natured and protects his lover from a knife attack. If a man protected me from a knife attack I wouldn't hesitate to marry him.'

Gu Jing's thoughts were consumed by Zhen Lang. She felt it was her fault that Zhen Lang almost lost the use of his right arm and he almost lost his career too.

Zhen Lang returned to his wife's hospital room and he draped a jacket around her shoulders. 'It's cold here, put on the jacket.'

Gu Jing finally remembered her torn dress and she put on Zhen Lang's jacket.

The director put pressure on Gu Jing's ankle cast and she winced. She felt a cold sweat on her forehead but she didn't cry out.

Zhen Lang's body tensed. 'Uncle Wan, is her ankle injury serious?'

'The ankle cast will help stabilize her ankle injury until it heals. But you two said that she injured the same ankle in the past so I recommend she doesn't put any excessive pressure on her injured ankle for a period,' the director said.

Gu Jing saw the anxiety on Zhen Lang's face. 'I'm ok. In the past my ankle hurts from time to time, I'm used to it.'

'All the times your ankle caused you pain in the past, why didn't you tell me?' Zhen Lang asked.

'It's not important,' Gu Jing said.

'Uncle Sun is her ankle cast secure? If uncle Sun thinks she needs additional treatments then uncle Sun can tell me and I'll bring her to the hospital,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing thought her ankle cast looked bigger than her head.

A man dressed in a suit knocked on the door. 'Mr Zhen. Miss Gu.'

Gu Jing looked at the door and she was surprised to see uncle Xie. 'Uncle Xie?'

The man walked into the room. He was shocked to see Zhen Lang's arm cast and Gu Jing's ankle cast. 'What happened?'

The man stood beside Zhen Lang and Zhen Lang explained to him what happened in the alley way. The man nodded his head, he took out his phone and he called the city's superintendent.

Gu Jing silently sat on the bed and she felt restricted by her ankle cast.

'Mr Zhen since your right arm is cast. Can you cooperate with me and answer a few questions? If everyone delayed my team's investigation like you then no cases would be resolved,' inspector Sun said.

The man spoke before Zhen Lang could answer. 'Are you inspector Sun? I'm Mr Zhen's lawyer. You can call me Xie Zhang. I'll answer all your questions.'

Inspector Sun felt he heard Xie Zhang's name before but he couldn't remember why. 'Can you explain about the situation clearly?'

Inspector Sun felt frustrated that he and his team waited a long time to



interview Zhen Lang, but Zhen Lang's lawyer showed up and said he could explain what happened to Zhen Lang.

Xie Zhang smiled politely. 'If you think it's wrong of me to answer your questions on behalf of Mr Zhen, do you want me to call your superintendent to get permission? Let me also ask why the cops five hundred metres from the alley way received a call but it took the cops more than half an hour to show up at the alley way?'

'Mr Zhen needs to follow police procedures like everyone else. He needs to come to the police station and file a report. Mr Xie, you can accompany Mr Zhen to the police station,' inspector Sun said.

The city's superintendent walked into the room and inspector Sun panicked on the inside. 'Superintendent.'

The superintendent glared at inspector Sun then he looked at Zhen Lang and he spoke politely. 'Mr Zhen, I didn't expect something like this to happen. I've ordered my juniors to investigate who assaulted you.'

Zhen Lang shook the superintendent's hand. 'My lawyer Mr Xie explained to you what happened on the phone. I think you know it's not a simple robbery case. The men who attacked us planned a kidnapping and they wanted to take revenge on someone else's behalf. It's likely they have triad connections. If I go to the police station then there'll be reporters there, what should I say to the reporters?'

The superintendent turned his head around and he pointed a finger at inspector Sun. 'Why aren't you leaving to investigate what happened?'

'I think if this incident is made into a big deal then it'll hinder the investigation. I won't go to the police station otherwise it'll escalate the situation and cause the public to panic unnecessarily. I'll keep a low profile and the reporters will not find out about the incident,' Zhen Lang said.

'Mr Zhen...' the superintendent said.

'Superintendent, I'm ok,' Zhen Lang said. He turned to Xie Zhang and he spoke softly. 'Don't let any of my family members know about what happened today.'

Xie Zhang reluctantly nodded his head.

‘Do you want me to order someone to escort you two home?’ the superintendent asked.

Zhen Lang shook his head then he held his wife’s hand. ‘Let’s go home.’

Zhen Lang helped his wife to sit on a wheelchair and he pushed the wheelchair with his left hand. ‘Little girl, why are you quiet?’

Gu Jing didn’t say anything.

‘Are you hungry? Do you want me to ask uncle Xie to order someone to deliver dinner dishes to our home?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing had no appetite for food and she shook her head.

‘Do you feel that you caused me trouble?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing shook her head.

‘Do you feel you failed to protect me and it makes you feel useless?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing’s body tensed but she didn’t say anything.

Gu Jing protected Zhen Lang for many years and she never lost a fight or let anyone injure Zhen Lang before. But in one day her ankle’s swollen and Zhen Lang’s right arm was injured.

‘I need your help for many things. If you don’t help me then I’ll be very pitiful,’ Zhen Lang said. He coughed softly. ‘I can’t move my right arm for a while. I don’t know how I can shower, brush my teeth or go to the toilet on my own. Apart from you there’s no else to help me. Will you help me?’

‘Um,’ Gu Jing said.

Xie Zhang ordered guards to keep a respectable distance from Zhen Lang and Gu Jing. Although Xie Zhang and the guards protected Zhen Lang and Gu Jing from a distance, they still heard Zhen Lang and Gu Jing’s conversation.

‘Then I’ll rely on you to help me with everything,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Ok, I promise I’ll help you with everything,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Ok, now will you smile?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘I’m not going to smile. You look like a fool to death,’ Gu Jing said.

‘You look more foolish than me,’ Zhen Lang said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Forty-Four

***Related***

# Forty-Five

## Chapter Forty-Five

A group of guards escorted Zhen Lang and Gu Jing home.

‘Gentlemen you can guard downstairs. If you stay on this floor then you’ll scare my neighbours,’ Zhen Lang said.

The guards shook their heads.

‘Gentlemen, can I request you to go home?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘Mr Zhen,’ a guard said. ‘Mr Xie instructed if you’re out of our sight for a second then we’re fired.’

‘I can’t be out of your sight for one second? Then what about me being intimate with my wife? Do you gentlemen want to stand by and watch?’ Zhen Lang asked sarcastically.

The guards were speechless.

‘I’ll talk to uncle Xie. Gentlemen, you can relax,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang took out his phone and he called Xie Zhang. Then the guards went to guard outside the building.

Gu Jing sat on the sofa and she propped her ankle cast on the coffee table. ‘Did they leave?’

Zhen Lang laughed helplessly. ‘No. They’re guarding outside.’

‘Downstairs? Perhaps it’s better if they guard outside the door and they’ll only scare our neighbours. If they’re downstairs they’ll scare too many people,’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang looked outside the windows and he saw the guards stood outside the building. ‘We have no other choice. Uncle Xie said if we don’t let them guard us then he’ll tell our family. If our family finds out they’ll send more guards to the city to drag us home.’

‘I don’t want to go back to our parents’ home. We just returned home. I don’t

want to go back there!’ Gu Jing said.

‘I don’t want to go back there either,’ Zhen Lang said. He sat next to his wife on the sofa. He saw her torn dress barely covered her body and he smiled. ‘If we go back, there will be many people who’ll intrude on our private time together.’

The moment Gu Jing arrived home she took off Zhen Lang’s jacket and her torn dress exposed her long slender legs.

‘Are you certain uncle Xie won’t tell our family?’ Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing laid her head on Zhen Lang’s shoulder, but like an electric shock she sat upright on the sofa.

Zhen Lang wrapped his left arm around his wife’s shoulder. ‘My left arm and shoulder are ok.’

Gu Jing couldn’t avoid Zhen Lang’s left arm so she laid her head on his left shoulder.

‘Don’t worry, I asked uncle Xie not to tell our family and I trust he’ll keep his promise,’ Zhen Lang said. He stroked his wife’s hair with his left hand. ‘No one is going to drag you to our parents’ home and imprison you.’

Gu Jing looked at her ankle cast. ‘It’s not much different than the state I’m in now.’

‘I’m here with you,’ Zhen Lang said. He propped his chin on his wife’s head. ‘I promise I won’t let you feel bored, ok?’

Gu Jing lifted her head. ‘Promise?’

‘Promise,’ Zhen Lang said. He kissed his wife’s cheek. ‘No one can separate us.’

‘Do you think I’m useless? In the past I didn’t think I would lose a fight and I didn’t think I would let anyone injure you,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing looked pitifully at Zhen Lang. ‘Since I was a child I promised to protect you and I ate all your lollipops but-’

Zhen Lang laughed. ‘It’s nothing. I’m not going to sue you for not keeping your verbal promise. I’ll buy you as many lollipops as you want.’

Gu Jing scoffed. ‘I don’t want to eat anything sweet.’

Gu Jing realised Zhen Lang's eyes were staring at her legs. She pulled his shirt collar. 'Confess, what are you staring at?'

Zhen Lang saw the fury in his wife's eyes and he laughed. He lifted her chin. 'Don't you know how seductive you look?'

'Seductive?' Gu Jing asked. She looked at her ankle cast. 'Are you laughing at me because I can't walk?'

Gu Jing waved her fists in the air but she didn't dare to hit Zhen Lang in case she would hurt his right arm.

'You do look seductive,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang's left hand slid down his wife's waist and he caressed her thigh under her dress.

Zhen Lang's hot hand that caressed Gu Jing's thigh made her feel relaxed and she yawned.

'Do you want to sleep?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing shook her head. 'I'm not tired.'

Gu Jing wrapped her arms around Zhen Lang's waist. She realised recently he loved to touch her body.

'Are you having fun touching my body?' Gu Jing asked.

'Um. Your skin is soft and smooth to touch,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang's left hand stopped caressing Gu Jing's thigh so she moved her body closer to his body. Then his left hand continued to caress her thigh.

Zhen Lang kissed his wife's cheek. 'Wife, on our wedding night you kicked me out of bed. Tonight's our first night home, let's make it a memorable night.'

'Um, tonight's a memorable night,' Gu Jing said softly.

Gu Jing closed her eyes and Zhen Lang gently kissed her lips. His gentle kisses tickled her lips and she laughed softly.

'Pay attention,' Zhen Lang said and he bit his wife's lips.

Gu Jing bit Zhen Lang's lips. They nibbled each other's lips like a bee's body

mingled together with pollen. Her hands moved from his waist to his neck. His left hand under her dress slid from her thigh to her waist. His lips released her lips and he kissed her neck. Her chest pressed against his chest, but she wanted their bodies to be closer.

Suddenly the doorbell rang like a bucket of cold water that extinguished Zhen Lang and Gu Jing's hot bodies on the sofa.

'Who is it?' Zhen Lang asked.

'Mr Zhen, Mr Xie instructed us to bring midnight meals and nutritious herbal soups for you,' a guard said.

Zhen Lang gently patted his wife's cheek. He got off the sofa, he walked to the front door and he opened the front door for the guards.

The guards brought many plates of food into Zhen Lang and Gu Jing's home. They put the plates of food on the coffee table then they walked downstairs and guarded outside the building.

Zhen Lang closed the front door and he sat on the sofa next to his dazed wife. 'Are you hungry?'

Zhen Lang heard his wife's stomach rumbled and he pinched her nose. 'Hurry up and eat.'

The aromas woke up Gu Jing's appetite. She grabbed a pair of chopsticks and she picked up a piece of meat. But when she opened her mouth she saw Zhen Lang's arm cast and she didn't want to eat.

Zhen Lang's left hand stroked his wife's hair and he smiled. 'Hurry up and eat. Aren't you really hungry?'

Gu Jing put the piece of meat in front of Zhen Lang's mouth. 'Let's eat together.'

Zhen Lang ate the piece of meat his wife fed him. 'Aren't you really hungry? You can eat first.'

Gu Jing shook her head and she fed Zhen Lang rice. 'I promised I'll help you with everything. You can't hold chopsticks with your left hand, let me feed you.'

'Is this eating together?' Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang wrapped his left arm around his wife's waist and he pulled her onto his lap.

Gu Jing held the bowl of rice under Zhen Lang's chin and she slowly fed him rice with her shaky hand and some of the rice fell on his neck. Then she fed him herbal chicken soup and she smiled sweetly. 'Eat more of the herbal chicken soup, it'll help your right arm heal faster.'

'You should eat the herbal chicken soup too,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing ate a spoonful of soup then she fed Zhen Lang another spoonful of soup.

'Ah! I dropped the soup on your neck,' Gu Jing said.

'Don't worry, I'm ok,' Zhen Lang said.

'Lucky the soup is warm and not hot,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang happily ate whatever his wife fed him and he didn't care about his stained shirt.

Gu Jing let Zhen Lang kiss her and touched her body whilst she fed him.

Gu Jing and Zhen Lang didn't finish their meals until the sun rose.

Gu Jing laid her head on Zhen Lang's shoulder and she yawned.

'Tired? Do you want me to prepare the bathtub?' Zhen Lang asked.

'Um,' Gu Jing said in her dazed state.

'Later help me take off my clothes and wash my back,' Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang got off the sofa and he walked toward the bathroom.

Gu Jing realised she had to face a naked Zhen Lang in the bathroom. After she washed his body, she would need to dry his body from top to bottom, left to right and front to back. That meant she would need to rub everywhere on his body. Thoughts about a naked Zhen Lang made her face flushed and her fingers and toes hot.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Forty-Five



***Related***

# Forty-Six

## Chapter Forty-Six

Gu Jing heard the sounds of water running from the bathroom, and she thought about Zhen Lang's kickboxer body in the bathtub.

Gu Jing calmed herself, she expected too much of Zhen Lang's body under his clothes. Although Zhen Lang wasn't a weakling, she didn't know if the rest of his body was firm like his shoulders, waist and bottom.

Zhen Lang poked his head through the bathroom door. 'Little girl, come here and help me.'

'Um,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing took a deep breath. Then she slowly hopped along a wall toward the bathroom to avoid pressure on her ankle cast.

Inside the bathroom Gu Jing didn't expect Zhen Lang would bend over and test the temperature of the bathtub water in his clothes.

'What are you thinking about?' Zhen Lang asked.

'I'm thinking about your firm round bottom,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing wanted to slap her cheeks after she carelessly answered Zhen Lang's question.

'Is that so? Do you want to touch my bottom?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing scoffed. 'Who wants to touch your bottom?'

Zhen Lang smiled and he pointed at the bathtub. 'Can you help me take a bath first? If you take a bath first, you'll get wet after you wash my body then you'll need to take another bath.'

Gu Jing nodded her head.

'Why didn't you use the wheelchair? If you hop around you'll be tired to death,' Zhen Lang said.

'I don't want to feel like an invalid,' Gu Jing mumbled.

‘Aren’t you one now?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘I can stand,’ Gu Jing said. She pressed her back against a wall to steady herself. ‘I’ll help you take off your clothes.’

Zhen Lang stood in front of Gu Jing. She slowly took off his shirt and she wanted to rub his firm chest and stomach. She was happy his chest wasn’t like the men on TV with a hairy chest and a beer belly. She swallowed her saliva and her fingers brushed over his chest.

‘The water is getting cold. Have you taken off my shirt yet?’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Oh! Yes!’ Gu Jing said and she quickly took off Zhen Lang’s shirt.

Zhen Lang tucked a loose strand of his wife’s hair behind her ear with his left hand. ‘Are you cold?’

Gu Jing shook her head.

Zhen Lang smiled. ‘If you’re not cold then why is your body trembling?’

Gu Jing didn’t know why her body trembled and why she felt breathless after she touched Zhen Lang’s body.

‘Why aren’t you taking a bath? Didn’t you say the water is getting cold?’ Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang pointed at his pants. ‘My pants.’

‘Mmm... ok,’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing slowly put her hands on Zhen Lang’s waist. Her hands brushed over his stomach, she felt an electric shock and she retrieved her hands.

‘What is it?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing took a deep breath and she ripped Zhen Lang’s pants in half.

Zhen Lang looked at his ripped pants in his wife’s hands and he shook his head helplessly. ‘Is this how you repay someone who saved your life?’

Gu Jing stared at the ceiling. ‘Are you taking a bath or not?’

Zhen Lang laughed softly and he sat in the bathtub. ‘Little girl, scrub my back.’

Gu Jing gripped a wet towel in her hands and she kept her eyes closed. She

reasoned that twenty-two years ago she had seen Zhen Lang naked so she didn't need to be nervous.

Gu Jing opened her eyes. 'Ah...'

Gu Jing was disappointed Zhen Lang's back faced her.

'Are you a peeping tom? Help me wash my hair,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing's body relaxed. She hung the wet towel over the edge of the bathtub. Then she put shampoo on Zhen Lang's head and she rubbed the shampoo through his hair. Although she fought with Zhen Lang for many years, it was the first time she washed his hair.

Zhen Lang closed his eyes and he enjoyed the sensation of his wife's hands rubbing his scalp. 'Little girl, do you know about my relationship with the old man?'

'Um,' Gu Jing said and she continued to wash Zhen Lang's hair.

'Do you remember the day the old man chased you and begged you to let him train you?' Zhen Lang asked.

'Do you mean the day the old man chased me from elementary school to my home? The old man begged my parents and me to let him train me,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing remembered that chicken flapped and dog barked day. She never met anyone as thick face as the old man. Even the principal thought the old man was sincere and the principal wanted to wrap her up and give her to the old man to train. The old man sat in front of her family home for days even on weekends to the point her neighbours thought her family owed him money. But she thought it was strange the old man wanted to train her instead of Zhen Lang.

'I said to the old man if you let him train you then I'll let him train me too,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing pulled Zhen Lang's hair. 'You were the trouble maker!'

Zhen Lang laughed and he let his wife pull his hair.

Gu Jing held Zhen Lang's cheeks and she turned his head around to face her. 'After I let the old man train me, why didn't I see you train with me?'

Gu Jing thought the old man tolerated Zhen Lang because of her, but she realised the old man let Zhen Lang watch her train so Zhen Lang could secretly learn the old man's martial arts skills too.

Zhen Lang kissed his wife's lips. 'If I trained in front of you then you wouldn't protect me anymore, and you wouldn't bully me anymore.'

Gu Jing was used to Zhen Lang's kisses and she let him kiss her.

'Honestly I wasn't interested in training. I only wanted to see you. I know you love being active and I knew you wanted to train. But I was scared you'll be injured, which was also why my dad-in-law and mum-in-law didn't want to let the old man train you either. If I don't let the old man train me then how would I know if your body can cope?' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing felt her heart overflowed with sweetness. 'Why did you want to follow me? Did you follow me to bully me?'

'It was you who chose me. If I don't follow you there's no one else who'll want me. Jing Jing, you need to be my maid.'

'Ah!' Gu Jing cried out.

Gu Jing lost her balance and she fell into the bathtub. Only her ankle cast stuck out over the edge of the bathtub.

'My love, what are you doing?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing lifted her head above the water and she pitifully choked on Zhen Lang's bath water.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Forty-Six

***Related***

# Side Story One

## Side Story One

Mrs Zhen cleaned a cupboard in her bedroom. But she pulled a jammed drawer and her family birth record accidentally fell on top of her head.

Mr Zhen walked into his bedroom and he saw his wife sat dazed on the bed. 'What are you doing?'

Mrs Zhen lifted her head and she passed her husband their family birth record.

Mr Zhen read their family birth record and he became dazed as his wife. There was an unexpected new addition to their family – 'Gu Jing, daughter-in-law.'

Mr Zhen quickly regained his senses. He patted his wife's shoulder and he smiled. 'I think you should ask-'

Mrs Zhen got off the bed and she grabbed her family birth record from her husband. 'Ok, I'm going downstairs to ask little sister.'

Mrs Zhen ran downstairs and she rang the doorbell. 'Little sister, open the door. Big news, big bad news...'

Upstairs Mr Zhen shook his head helplessly. He picked up the fallen documents on the floor and he put it back on top of the cupboard. He mumbled to himself. 'If you ask our son then you can confirm the news faster.'

Mrs Gu kneaded dough in the kitchen. She heard the doorbell and she ran to open the front door. 'What big bad news?'

Mrs Zhen waved her family birth record in front of Mrs Gu. 'It's big news, good news but also a little bad news.'

Mrs Gu didn't know what happened from head to tail and she panicked. 'What happened that's good and bad?'

'Little sister, did you check your family birth record after Lang Lang updated it for you?' Mrs Zhen asked.

Mrs Gu shook her head. 'Lang Lang is always responsible, I don't need to check it.'

Mrs Zhen didn't know what to say. She opened her family birth record and she gave it to Mrs Gu. 'Take a look.'

Mrs Gu stared at the word daughter-in-law. She took a deep breath, lifted her head and her eyes silently asked Mrs Zhen if she saw daughter-in-law correctly. Mrs Zhen nodded her head and they contemplated silently for a while.

'I'm going to kill the rabbit!' Mrs Gu said.

Mrs Gu ran into the kitchen. She grabbed a rolling pin and she ran to the front door. 'Don't worry I won't kill your little boy. I'll roll my little girl into minced meat.'

'Then my Lang Lang will be a widower. The little girl is my daughter-in-law. Little sister, you're not allowed to hit my daughter-in-law,' Mrs Zhen said.

Mrs Gu felt frustrated her daughter became someone's daughter-in-law without her permission and Mrs Zhen didn't let her hit her daughter.

Mr Gu ran to the front door and he grabbed the rolling pin from his wife's hands. 'Shouldn't we ask them to explain this situation properly to us? Last time they stayed here for three days then they ran away. I knew they were up to something, it turns out they were hiding this.'

'Ok, I'm going to ask them on the phone,' Mrs Gu said.

Mr Zhen ran downstairs and he stopped Mrs Gu from calling his son and daughter-in-law. 'Wait.'

'What are we waiting for? The last time the two of them came here was three months ago. That means the two of them have been secretly married for three months. If we don't expose their secret marriage now then they'll hide their marriage from us for years,' Mrs Zhen said.

'Last time they ran away. If we call them now, what if they run away again?' Mr Zhen said.

Mr Gu nodded his head. 'I think it's better to interrogate them in person than over the phone too.'

Mr and Mrs Zhen and Mr and Mrs Gu looked at each other and they nodded their heads at the same time.

At the newlyweds' home, two bodies slept on a bed.

Zhen Lang opened his eyes and he looked at his wife who laid on his arm. 'Little girl, are you awake?'

'Um,' Gu Jing mumbled.

Gu Jing hated the bright morning sunlight. She rolled over. She found a comfortable spot on Zhen Lang's chest and she went back to sleep.

Zhen Lang pinched his wife's nose. 'In the past didn't you always train in the morning? You're getting lazier by the day.'

Gu Jing didn't want to open her eyes and she spoke softly. 'Today's a weekend.'

'If the old man knows you're too lazy to train then the old man will be heartbroken,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing grabbed Zhen Lang's hand that pinched her nose and she wrapped a leg around his waist. 'If you keep making a racket, I'll kick you out of bed.'

Zhen Lang looked at his wife's rosy sleepy face and her pink lips that pouted. He wrapped an arm around her waist. He kissed her forehead and cheeks.

Gu Jing rubbed her head against Zhen Lang's chest. 'Let me sleep.'

'You slept for a long time. Last night we went to bed at eight,' Zhen Lang said.

'But you didn't let me sleep until the middle of the night,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing opened her eyes and she saw Zhen Lang's kiss marks on her skin under her wrinkled shirt.

'Wake up and train. Last time the old man visited us, the old man wasn't impressed by your laziness,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing's whole body ached and she only wanted to sleep. She couldn't hold back and she kicked Zhen Lang, but he caught her ankle. 'You little demon! Before when I competed in tournaments it wasn't as tiring as last night.'

Sunlight reflected off the anklet on Gu Jing's ankle.

Zhen Lang kissed his wife's ankle. 'I have a way for you to listen to the old man and train in morning, but you'll still get to lay in bed.'



Gu Jing realised since Zhen Lang found out her ticklish spot on her ankle, he would kiss her ankle until she surrendered.

‘I don’t want to! Don’t think that I don’t know what you’re thinking, little demon!’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing never seen anyone like Zhen Lang who could battle all night and still wake up refreshed the next day for work. She didn’t get a peaceful night’s sleep in bed with Zhen Lang. She suspected Zhen Lang owned a secret ancient martial arts endurance power.

‘You can rest,’ Zhen Lang said. He slid his hand down his wife’s pants. ‘I’ll come to you.’

‘Wait,’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang valued a master and pupil’s relationship. Of course he would listen to his master and train every day.

Gu Jing heard her heavy breaths, she wrapped her arms around Zhen Lang’s neck and she felt his forcefulness. ‘I-hate-you!’

Zhen Lang kissed his wife’s lips and he swallowed her resentment. ‘But I love you.’

Zhen Lang knew his wife for more than twenty years and he thought they were compatible in many ways like their personalities, their habits and their compatibility in bed.

Unbeknownst to the newlyweds in bed, the newlywed’s parents took the first flight to the city to interrogate them.

Mrs Gu gently opened her daughter and son-in-law’s bedroom door.

‘Rab-’ Mrs Gu said.

Mr Gu covered his wife’s mouth and he closed their daughter and son-in-law’s bedroom door.

Mrs Zhen pressed her ear against her son and daughter-in-law’s bedroom door for two seconds and her husband pulled her away from the bedroom door.

The newlyweds’ parents waited in the living room.

Mr Zhen and Mr Gu shook hands and they congratulated each other.

‘Congratulations,’ Mr Zhen said.

‘Congratulations to you too,’ Mr Gu said.

Half an hour later Mr Zhen and Mr Gu shook hands again.

‘You raised a good daughter,’ Mr Zhen said.

‘You raised an impressive son,’ Mr Gu said.

One hour later Mr Zhen and Mr Gu shook hands again.

‘I’m sorry I raised a ghastly son,’ Mr Zhen said.

‘I’m sorry I raised a scary daughter,’ Mr Gu said.

Another hour later Mrs Gu stopped her husband and Mr Zhen from shaking hands. ‘Let’s go to the supermarkets together. We need to buy nutritious herbal soup tonics to replenish their energy.’

The newlyweds’ parents glanced at the closed bedroom door and they nodded their heads. Then the newlyweds’ parents disappeared in an elevator.

\*\*\*

End of Side Story One

***Related***

# Side Story Two

## Side Story Two

‘What is this for?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang arrived home and he saw his wife jumped up and down on a new large rubber mat on the living room floor.

‘Come here and try it out. Is it soft and comfortable? Then it won’t be a problem to roll around on it,’ Gu Jing said.

‘I promised you can renovate our home any way you like. If you want to change the floor boards to carpet, it’s ok. Carpets are comfortable,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing happily jumped up and down and she didn’t see the bright smile on Zhen Lang’s face. ‘Look at how spacious our living room is and we don’t have visitors come over often. I thought about it for a long time, what do you think about renovating our home like the old man’s home? We can train here!’

‘Ok,’ Zhen Lang said. He watched his wife happily jump up and down like a little kitten. ‘We can roll around on a rubber carpet anytime, right?’

Gu Jing nodded her head. ‘Of course.’

The next day Gu Jing contracted a renovation company and the company installed an eighty square metre rubber carpet in the living room.

Gu Jing moved the sofa and coffee table to a corner of the living room.

Gu Jing sat on the new rubber carpet floor and she hugged a sofa pillow.

Gu Jing heard the front door opened and she saw Zhen Lang returned home from work.

‘Do you like it? I had professionals install the carpet. It’s the same carpet the national team use for training. It’s better than the one the old man has in his home,’ Gu Jing said.

‘That good? Did you try it out?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing stood in front of Zhen Lang. She took off Zhen Lang’s jacket and she

put his suitcase and the pillow on the sofa. 'I think it's good. You should try it out too.'

Zhen Lang rolled up his shirt sleeves and he unbuttoned his shirt collar. 'It's more fun if two people try it out, right?'

Gu Jing's heart blossomed. She loved watching Zhen Lang undress. 'Um. Let's try it out together.'

'Ok,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing felt excited, because Zhen Lang agreed easily. Usually he didn't want to spar with her and it made her arms and legs itchy.

'Really? You agree?' Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang nodded his head and he smiled. 'I agree.'

'Then...' Gu Jing said. She stood in front of Zhen Lang and she smiled sweetly. 'Are you tired? Do you want to rest first? Are you hungry? Do you want to eat dinner first?'

'No need,' Zhen Lang said. He stood in a fighting stance and he waved a hand at his wife. 'Come here.'

'Ok,' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing took two steps away from Zhen Lang and she stood in a fighting stance. They both observed each other's arms and legs for any sudden movements.

Gu Jing lifted her long leg and she kicked fast. Zhen Lang used his arm to block her kick.

Gu Jing did a roundhouse kick aimed at Zhen Lang's waist.

Zhen Lang took two steps back and he avoided his wife's kick. 'Beautiful.' He lifted his chin. 'Continue.'

Gu Jing released a ki shout. She felt happy to fight with a strong opponent and she used her real physical strength to attack.

Gu Jing's kicks and punches were fast. Zhen Lang blocked or avoided her attacks, but he didn't attack her.

Gu Jing felt sweat on her forehead after she consecutively attacked Zhen Lang for a while. She stood still and she glared at him. 'You're looking down on me.'

'I'm not,' Zhen Lang said. He lifted his collar to show his sweaty neck to his wife. 'You know you're a highly skilled fighter, no one dares to look down on you.'

'Then why aren't you attacking me? If I attack you then you would take a step back. The living room isn't spacious enough for you to keep retreating,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang took off his shirt and exposed his bare chest. 'Ok, I won't retreat anymore. Come here.'

Gu Jing kicked in the direction of Zhen Lang's chest. He took two steps back. Then he stood behind her back and he gripped her waist.

'Ah!' Gu Jing cried out. She turned her head around and she glared at Zhen Lang. 'Hey, you broke a rule.'

'Did I?' Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang lifted his wife effortlessly and he held her in his arms.

Gu Jing wanted to reason with Zhen Lang and she forgot to attack him. 'Of course, you're not allowed to lift your opponent.'

Zhen Lang kissed his wife's lips. 'I agreed to try out the carpet with you. I didn't say I wanted to fight according to tournament rules with you.'

'If we don't fight, how do we know if the carpet can withstand our body pressures or whether it'll cushion our falls?' Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing tried to bite Zhen Lang's chest but he lifted her body closer to his neck.

Gu Jing couldn't escape Zhen Lang's tight hold. 'You promised to try out the carpet with me, you can't break your promise-'

Zhen Lang crouched and he dropped his wife on the soft floor.

Gu Jing didn't feel any pain. The moment her back touched the soft floor she wanted to jump off the floor. But Zhen Lang's sweaty body laid on top of her body and she felt his familiar hot breath on her face.

‘If you want to see if the carpet is good, it’s simple,’ Zhen Lang said. He unbuttoned his wife’s shirt. ‘I promise you’ll be satisfied.’

‘You...’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang took off her shirt and his hand moved to her pants.

‘You...’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang kissed Gu Jing and she felt the soft carpet pressed against her back. She moved her head to the side. ‘I’m sweaty. I want to shower-’

Zhen Lang bit his wife’s ear and his hands caressed her skin. ‘You’re going to be sweating more. Later we can shower together.’

‘Then...’ Gu Jing said. She couldn’t think of any good excuses to escape. ‘I’m hungry. Cook dinner for me.’

Zhen Lang licked his wife’s tongue. ‘Food taste better after exercise. Later I’ll take you out for dinner. Let me eat first.’

Gu Jing felt like a little kitten that fell into a wolf’s trap and she had no escape route.

Gu Jing felt a cold wind swept into the living room. ‘The window and curtains aren’t closed.’

‘It doesn’t matter if the window and curtains are left open. It’s not the first time. Do you remember our first night together? We didn’t close the window and it was a floor-to-ceiling window,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing remembered her first night together with Zhen Lang was a beautiful night. But it was also her most embarrassing night. He took her to a honeymoon suite in the city’s best hotel. He opened the curtains of the suite’s living room and he undressed her whilst her back pressed against the floor-to-ceiling window. She remembered car lights on the roads below the hotel and the loving words he whispered in her ear when their bodies joined.

Gu Jing blushed and she pushed Zhen Lang’s chest in vain. ‘Little demon, you deceived me. We don’t know who’s the winner and loser yet.’

Zhen Lang captured his wife’s hand that escaped from under his body. ‘We can determine who is the winner and loser from a different perspective.’ He rolled

over, his back laid on the soft floor and his wife straddled his waist. 'If my loving wife is this enthusiastic then as your husband I'm not going to refuse your request.'

Gu Jing couldn't control her body reactions. She felt like a small boat guided by a helmsman. After she arrived breathless at the destination, her sweaty body collapsed on Zhen Lang's body.

Zhen Lang kissed his wife's forehead, between her eyebrows and her lips. 'I lost. You won, do you feel proud?'

Gu Jing looked at Zhen Lang's triumphant face. Then she looked at her weak arms and legs, she didn't feel like a proud winner. She didn't want to eat dinner, shower or closed the window and curtains. She only wanted to sleep.

'Since I won you need to listen to me, right?' Gu Jing asked.

'But my loving wife...' Zhen Lang said. He caressed his wife's skin. 'Since you won, shouldn't we have a rematch to give me a chance to redeem myself?'

Gu Jing widened her eyes but she couldn't move her body. She felt something between her legs grew and she understood what Zhen Lang meant. She wanted to shake her head, but he rolled her over on her back and he laid on top of her.

'You can chose to win against me or you can choose to let me win,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing looked defiantly at Zhen Lang. She didn't think the two choices he gave her were different.

Zhen Lang smiled. 'The difference is if I lose then I want another chance to redeem myself.'

Gu Jing silently swore she never wanted to try anything else together with the little demon again. Because last time Zhen Lang used the opportunities to try out their new bed, bathtub and sofa in the same way they tried out the new carpet.

'My loving wife, our home still needs more furnishings. Remember to tell me if you want to buy anything else like a dining table, ok? I love big dining tables, understand?' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing whimpered softly, but it was hard to determine if her whimper meant a

no or a yes.

\*\*\*

End of Side Story Two

***Related***



# Side Story Three

## Side Story Three

Master sat inside the principal's office for three hours. He spent three hours explaining to the principal, Mr and Mrs Zhen and Mr and Mrs Gu that he didn't plan on kidnapping Zhen Lang and Gu Jing.

'I really like Zhen Lang and Gu Jing. Their bodies are suitable for training. Let me train them and I promise they'll be chosen to be on the national team,' master pleaded.

Mrs Gu looked at her husband but she didn't say anything.

Mrs Zhen took slow breaths.

Mr Zhen secretly winked at Mr Gu. 'It's good for young children to train their bodies, especially young boys.'

Mrs Zhen suppressed her anxieties.

Mr Zhen patted his wife's tensed hand and he looked apologetically at master. 'But I'm sorry, Zhen Lang is mine and my wife's only son. My wife doesn't want our son to suffer.'

Master heard the finality in Mr Zhen's tone of voice, and he knew Mr and Mrs Gu's consent was his last hope. 'I think Gu Jing is a lively girl. It's better if you let me train her than let her run around wild and causing trouble. It's good for her to learn self-defence to protect herself in the future. Others can't bully her and she gets to be on the national team.'

Master wanted to carry Zhen Lang and Gu Jing back to his home and train them. He looked at Mrs Zhen's resolute face and he knew Zhen Lang was off the table. But he didn't want to let go of the chance to at least make Gu Jing his pupil. Zhen Lang and Gu Jing were like buried jade, it'd be a tragedy to waste their potentials.

Mrs Gu contemplated about master's words. She knew her daughter loved to jump up and down all day, whether chasing chickens, kicking dogs or punching cats. One look at her daughter and her heart would feel anxious. It'd be good to

let master train her daughter and take away some of her daughter's restless energy.

Mr Gu gaged his wife's thoughts for a while. 'Mine and my wife's daughter likes to be active, but I don't want to pressure our daughter. If our daughter wants to train with you then you have my permission to train her. If our daughter doesn't want to train with you then there's nothing left to discuss.'

Master didn't receive a definite consent, but there was a shred of hope left. He knew Gu Jing loved to fight, and she would agree to train with him.

Zhen Lang's voice outside the principal's office broke master's hopeful thoughts.

'They're fighting!' Zhen Lang said.

Mrs Gu jumped up and she rushed outside. 'Little rabbit, you trouble maker! I'm going to knock a hole in your head!'

Everyone else in the principal's office followed Mrs Gu outside.

On the playground, there was a big tear on Gu Jing's shirt, her shirt sleeves were torn too, her body was covered in dust, a drip of blood below her nose and she stood in front of Zhen Lang to protect him.

Gu Jing wiped her nose with her shirt sleeve and she didn't care about the blood stain on her shirt sleeve. She looked defiantly at the bigger boys that surrounded her and Zhen Lang. 'Come here, how dare you bully Zhen Lang. Come here and continue to fight me.'

The seven or eight bigger boys were in a more pitiful state than Gu Jing. Their bodies were covered in dust, bruises and scratch marks.

'Little rabbit, you trouble maker!' Mrs Gu yelled.

Gu Jing pouted her lips and she protested. 'They were bullying Zhen Lang!'

The moment the bigger boys saw the adults they dispersed and ran off in different directions.

Gu Jing wanted to chase after them. 'Don't run away! Fight another round with me. If you boys lose then you boys have to promise not to make any more trouble!'

‘Fight your head,’ Mrs Gu said. She pulled her daughter’s shirt collar to stop her daughter chasing those boys. ‘If you fight again then I’ll skin you.’

‘Wait,’ Gu Jing said. She took off her shirt to escape her mum’s grip. She ran to Zhen Lang, held his doll face and she carefully looked at his body to see if he was injured anywhere. ‘Are you ok? Did they hit you anywhere?’

Zhen Lang shook his head. He gently wiped the blood off Gu Jing’s nose. Suddenly he blinked back tears in his eyes.

‘You promised me you wouldn’t cry anymore,’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang quickly blinked several times. A tear drop fell down his eyelashes, but he held back his tears like his life depended on it.

‘You’re bleeding,’ Zhen Lang said. He frowned and he gently rubbed Gu Jing’s cheeks. ‘Are you in pain?’

Gu Jing shook her head and she smiled. ‘I’m used to it. If you were hit then you would feel pain.’

Gu Jing licked her teeth and she took out a broken tooth. ‘Mum, I broke a tooth.’

Gu Jing didn’t care about the blood on her broken tooth and she showed it to her mum.

‘Ah!’ Master cried. He rushed toward Gu Jing and stood in front of her. Her broken tooth broke his heart to death. ‘Did those boys hit you? Are you in pain?’

Gu Jing put up her guard. ‘Who are you?’

‘Uncle is a highly skilled fighter. Do you want to follow master and learn how to fight?’ master said.

Gu Jing’s eyes lit up. ‘Will it help me to protect Zhen Lang?’

‘Of course!’ master said. He hit his puffed chest. ‘Today you were hit. But in the future you can fight against ten people and it won’t be a problem. You can definitely protect Zhen Lang.’

‘Then...’ Gu Jing said. She looked at Zhen Lang who stood next to her. She held his soft hand. ‘I’m going to learn to fight. In the future I can protect you, you

won't be bullied anymore, ok?'

Zhen Lang looked at Gu Jing's broken tooth on the ground, but he didn't say anything.

Gu Jing shook Zhen Lang's hand. 'You belong to me. I won't let anyone else touch your body. I don't care, it's decided, I'm going to learn to fight then I can protect you.'

'Stop talking, hurry up and go to the nurse's office,' the six adults said.

Gu Jing held Zhen Lang's hand and they ran to the nurse's office.

A doctor arrived and examined Gu Jing's body for injuries.

Zhen Lang silently held Gu Jing's hand and he frowned.

Gu Jing smiled sweetly. 'Zhen Lang, I want to learn to fight. But while I'm learning to fight I won't see you.' She frowned. 'Then I won't learn to fight anymore. Besides, I'm already winning fights.'

Master didn't want to let Gu Jing fly away. 'Zhen Lang can be beside you and watch you while you learn to fight.'

Gu Jing looked pitifully at Zhen Lang and she waited for his answer.

Zhen Lang held Gu Jing's hand tightly and he nodded his head. 'Ok, I'll be beside Gu Jing while she learns to fight.'

Gu Jing's smile was like a beautiful camellia, except a little dusty with a missing tooth.

'Gu Jing's ok. Her baby teeth are wobbly. A new tooth will replace her broken teeth. She needs to take good care of her teeth,' the doctor said.

The adults in the room sighed in relief and they focused their attentions on Gu Jing. They didn't notice Zhen Lang was in deep thought, which was unusual for a young child his age.

Master's wish was granted. He trained Gu Jing and her fighting skills improved after each training session. Zhen Lang always silently stayed beside Gu Jing, and he watched her train. If Gu Jing turned around to look at him, he would smile. After she finished a training session he would unwrap a lollipop and give it to her.

A few days after master trained Gu Jing, he was surprised to see Zhen Lang calmly waited for him outside his home. It made him wonder why Zhen Lang and Gu Jing's personalities were so different but they loved to be around each other.

Master looked behind Zhen Lang, but he didn't see his precious little monkey pupil. 'Where's Gu Jing?'

Zhen Lang walked into master's home. He put his bag on the living room floor and he stood where Gu Jing always stood to train. 'She's staying back at school. The teacher scolded her for not doing her homework.'

Master still felt regretful Zhen Lang couldn't be his pupil too. 'Then did you come here to look for me?'

'Yes. If I learn to fight does it mean I can protect someone else?' Zhen Lang said.

Master hit his puffed chest. 'Of course, didn't you see for yourself? All my pupils have good fighting skills.'

Zhen Lang nodded his head. 'Ok, from today onward I'll learn to fight with master.'

'Really?' master asked.

Master wanted to hug the handsome doll face Zhen Lang. But unexpectedly Zhen Lang's reaction was faster, Zhen Lang ran a few steps and avoided his hug.

'But I have conditions. Firstly, I'm not going to learn to fight with Gu Jing and master can't tell Gu Jing that I'm your pupil too. Secondly, I'm not going to compete in any tournaments. I'm only learning to fight because I don't want anyone else bully Gu Jing. Thirdly, if you let Gu Jing be injured then I won't let her learn to fight with master anymore,' Zhen Lang said.

Master was surprised why Zhen Lang was a child but he discussed conditions with him like an adult.

Zhen Lang frowned. 'Master, do you agree to my conditions? If you disagree with my conditions then I'll find someone else to train me.'

'Of course I agree!' Master said and he nodded his head.

Master thought as long as Zhen Lang became his pupil, he didn't need to take

a young child's conditions seriously. Perhaps later Zhen Lang would taste victory after a fight and Zhen Lang would change his mind about wanting to compete in tournaments.

‘When do you want to train? You’re with Gu Jing all day, perhaps you can’t secretly train without her knowing. Why don’t you train together with her?’ master said.

‘No need,’ Zhen Lang said. He picked up his school bag and he brushed dust off his school bag. ‘Gu Jing takes a long time to study. Each day I have at least two or three hours free to look for master.’

Master didn’t know if it was possible to train Zhen Lang without Gu Jing finding out.

Zhen Lang waved bye to master. ‘I said everything with master. I’m going home.’

Master ran outside and he called out to Zhen Lang. ‘Do you want to learn to fight because you saw Gu Jing was hurt last time? If it’s true then why did you wait until now to say something?’

Zhen Lang stopped walking, turned around and he smiled at master. ‘If I don’t see for myself that you’re a highly skilled fighter, how will I know if you’re suited to be my master?’

Master was speechless.

\*\*\*

End of Side Story Three

***Related***

# part 1

## Side Story Four (Part 1)

Gu Jing stayed back after school. On her desk were stacks of books and she crazily did her homework.

‘Gu Jing, why aren’t you going home? Do you need me to help you?’ the first student asked.

‘I’m almost done,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Don’t worry about Gu Jing. You know she’s waiting for someone,’ the second student said.

Young adolescents at the age of twelve and thirteen became aware of the opposite gender. If a girl and boy were close at that age then they were often teasing targets.

Gu Jing ignored her classmates’ laughter, because her teacher caught her not doing her homework and she had to stay behind and finish her homework. She didn’t dare to be lazy again.

Gu Jing’s class mates went home. She sat at her desk, did her homework and occasionally she glanced at the door. She packed her school bag when she saw Zhen Lang at the door.

Zhen Lang stood at the door of Gu Jing’s class room and he smiled. ‘Gu Jing, school’s over.’

‘Look, isn’t that Zhen Lang?’ the third student who walked pass Zhen Lang asked softly.

‘Every day Zhen Lang comes to take Gu Jing home. They have a good relationship,’ the fourth student next to the third student said enviously.

‘Zhen Lang and Gu Jing’s homes are close together, of course they’ll go home together. Zhen Lang is the smartest student in the school, why would he like Gu Jing?’ the third student said spitefully.

‘That makes sense,’ the fourth student said and she walked home with the

third student.

Gu Jing put an arm through her school bag strap, she ignored the other students' insults and she walked to the door. She was used to the students' admiration toward Zhen Lang, because he was the smartest student in the school and she was the school's tomboy. She often heard other students say she was like a horse next to a prince if the other students saw her together with Zhen Lang.

'Give me your bag,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing was tall for her age, but no matter how much she jumped around she was never taller than Zhen Lang.

Zhen Lang carried two school bags on his shoulder toward. On the way to his bike he took out a lollipop from his school bag, unwrapped it and gave it to Gu Jing. 'How's your ankle?'

Gu Jing put the lollipop in her mouth. 'It still hurts a bit. Mum won't let me ride my bike, but I feel good.'

Zhen Lang stood beside his bike and he frowned. 'It still hurts?'

'It's my third ankle injury so it takes a little longer to heal,' Gu Jing said.

'Then don't jump around at night,' Zhen Lang said. He passed Gu Jing their school bags and he sat on the rider's seat. 'Sit on the back seat.'

Gu Jing sat on the back seat of Zhen Lang's bike. She wrapped an arm around his waist. He pedalled whilst she hummed on the way home.

'You seem happy today,' Zhen Lang said.

'Um. Today Xu Hing from my class asked if I can ride a bike home. I said tomorrow I can ride a bike home and she said she that we can ride our bikes home together from tomorrow onward,' Gu Jing said.

'She only said a few words to you?' Zhen Lang asked and he smiled. 'You're easily satisfied.'

Gu Jing smiled. 'Most of the girls in my class say I'm a tomboy and they don't like to play with me. Xu Hing is the first girl who wants to talk to me. Tomorrow I don't need to sit on your bike anymore. I want to go home with Xu Hing.'



Zhen Lang pedalled slower. 'Your ankle still hurts.'

'I don't care. I never had a girlfriend before, I want to go home with Xu Hing,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang frowned and Gu Jing didn't say anything else. He pedalled silently the rest of the way home.

Zhen Lang braked in front of his and Gu Jing's home. She jumped off his bike, gave him his school bag and she walked to her home.

'Little girl,' Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing ignored Zhen Lang who walked behind her.

'Then how about tomorrow you sit at the back of my bike? I'll take you home and she can ride next to us, ok?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing stood still and she slowly turned around to face Zhen Lang.

'What do you think?' Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing smiled and she nodded her head. 'Ok.'

The next day a strange scene of two bikes rode home together. Zhen Lang rode his bike with Gu Jing on the back seat whilst Xu Hing rode on her bike and followed behind them.

Xu Hing pedalled faster for her bike to be on the right side of Zhen Lang's bike. Gu Jing smiled at her, but Zhen Lang ignored her so she talked about school work.

School work was not Gu Jing's forte. She poked Zhen Lang's waist to silently ask him to help Xu Hing. He reluctantly answered Xu Hing's question about school work.

Gu Jing was happy she had a girlfriend to the point she regretted she couldn't throw Zhen Lang aside. But Zhen Lang always guarded her class room door after school each day and she couldn't escape from him. She had no choice except go home together with Zhen Lang and Xu Hing after school.

Gu Jing went home together with Zhen Lang and Xu Hing for three months and it was nearly Gu Jing's birthday. Gu Jing was happy her ankle almost healed and

she wanted to invite Xu Hing to celebrate her birthday.

‘Zhen Lang, for little girl’s birthday what do you want to eat?’ Mrs Gu asked affectionately.

Gu Jing didn’t understand why it was her birthday, but her mum asked Zhen Lang what he wanted to eat.

Zhen Lang saw Gu Jing pouted her lips and he smiled with aunty Gu. ‘Aunty Gu, I want to eat something sweet like a big pink flower icing.’

Gu Jing’s trial for the national team was the day after her birthday. She knew she had a good chance of making the team. She liked sweets so Zhen Lang’s request for a sweet cake made her happier.

Gu Jing smiled and she propped her arm on Zhen Lang’s shoulder. ‘Hey, what are you getting me for my birthday?’

‘What do you want for you birthday?’ Zhen Lang asked.

‘I don’t know,’ Gu Jing said and she smiled. ‘You can think about what I want for my birthday.’

‘I hope you’ll be surprised when you open the birthday gift I’m getting you,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang smiled and his thumb caressed Gu Jing’s chin.

‘If I make it on the national team, will you give me a congratulatory gift?’ Gu Jing asked.

Zhen Lang looked at Gu Jing’s arm on his shoulder for a while then he nodded his head.

On Gu Jing’s birthday she was happy she was a year older. She stared at her sweet birthday cake on the dining table. ‘Mum, when can I eat the cake?’

Mrs Gu poked her head through the kitchen door. ‘You’re not allowed to touch the cake until aunty and uncle Zhen and Zhen Lang are here.’

‘Yes mum,’ Gu Jing said and she drooled.

‘Didn’t you say you invited a class mate? Why aren’t you going outside to see if she’s here? What if she’s lost?’ Mrs Gu asked.

‘Yes mum!’ Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing remembered she invited Xu Hing and she ran outside.

Outside Gu Jing’s home Xu Hing wore a pretty red dress and she shyly spoke to Zhen Lang.

‘Aren’t you here to celebrate Gu Jing’s birthday? Why did you ask me to come here?’ Zhen Lang asked coldly.

‘I...’ Xu Hing said. She blushed and she put a gift in front of Zhen Lang’s face. ‘It’s for you. Thank you for helping me with school work on the way home.’

Zhen Lang glanced at the box in the girl’s hand, but he kept his hands in his pants pockets. ‘I didn’t help you with your school work and I have no interest in helping you with your school work.’

‘But you did help me with school work,’ Xu Hing said softly.

Zhen Lang’s back rested against a wall and he looked coldly at the girl. ‘Gu Jing asked me so I answered.’

Xu Hing’s hand that held the gift drooped and she bit her lips.

‘Since you’re here, hurry up and go inside Gu Jing’s home. She’s waiting for you,’ Zhen Lang said impatiently.

Zhen Lang walked passed the girl toward Gu Jing’s home.

‘If I ask Gu Jing to ask you to help me with my school work, of course you wouldn’t dare not to help me with my school work,’ Xu Hing threatened.

Zhen Lang turned around and he smiled coldly at the girl.

Xu Hing was dazzled by Zhen Lang’s smile.

Zhen Lang slowly stepped back to the girl and he stood in front of her. ‘Do you mean that you used Gu Jing to talk to me?’

Xu Hing struggled to calm herself. She looked at Zhen Lang’s handsome face and it made her more anxious. ‘I...’

‘It’s not hard to help you with your school work,’ Zhen Lang said coldly. He grabbed the gift from the girl’s hand. ‘You can ask me directly for help.’

‘Really?’ Xu Hing asked.

Zhen Lang nodded his head. ‘Really. But I have one request. If your target is me then there’s no need for you to follow a bore like Gu Jing. You’re a gentle girl, it’s not suitable for you to hang around Gu Jing.’

‘Ok,’ Xu Hing agreed without hesitation. She took out a different gift from her bag and she gave it to Zhen Lang. ‘Give this to Gu Jing for me, I’m going home.’

Zhen Lang waited until the deluded girl happily pedalled her bike at a far distance. Then he threw the gift the girl got him into a bin.

Gu Jing saw Zhen Lang turned around and she quickly hid behind a wall. She didn’t hear the start of Zhen Lang and Xu Hing’s conversation, because they spoke softly. But later Zhen Lang and Xu Hing spoke in a louder voice. Gu Jing clearly heard Zhen Lang’s parting words to Xu Hing – ‘You can ask me directly for help. A gentle girl like you isn’t suitable to hang around Gu Jing.’

In that moment Zhen Lang’s words made Gu Jing’s heart fell into an abyss. Gu Jing felt sad Xu Hing left without hesitation and Gu Jing stood in a daze because she didn’t know what happened and why Xu Hing left. But Zhen Lang’s words hurt Gu Jing more. She didn’t understand why someone she knew for many years would say she wasn’t suitable to hang around gentle girls.

Gu Jing didn’t know why Zhen Lang looked down on her and why he broke apart her first friendship with someone else. She wondered if Zhen Lang knew how much she valued friendship. She finally realised what sort of person Zhen Lang truly was after knowing him for many years!

Gu Jing ran into her home. She saw her mum was busy in the kitchen and her mum didn’t notice her bleached white face.

‘Is your friend here? Go upstairs, ask aunty and uncle Zhen and Zhen Lang to come downstairs. Dinner will be ready soon,’ Mrs Gu said.

Zhen Lang’s name felt like a heavy jinx that kicked Gu Jing’s heart. The bright pink flower icing on her birthday cake was an eyesore. She crazily carried her birthday cake into her room. Inside her room she ate each piece of the cake.

Gu Jing thought if Zhen Lang liked to eat sweet birthday cakes then she wasn’t going to let him! If Zhen Lang liked big pink flower icing then there was no door

for him to eat it! If Zhen Lang hates tomboys, likes to steal her friend away then she won't care about him anymore and she won't spend time with someone who likes to mock her.

Gu Jing thought Zhen Lang could be his fake obedient student and she would be her rowdy tomboy self. She felt like Zhen Lang's face floated in front of her. She used more strength to bite each piece of cake as if she bit Zhen Lang.

Gu Jing started to regret why she chose to run away, and why she was scared Zhen Lang would see her. Her usual self would charge at Zhen Lang, hit him and yell at him. But she chose to stay inside her room and silently eat sweet birthday cake to get rid of her anger.

\*\*\*

End of Side Story Four (Part 1)

***Related***

## part 2

### Side Story Four (Part 2 of 2)

‘Little girl where are you?’ Mrs Gu asked.

‘Little girl, Zhen Lang got you a special birthday gift. Come outside and open it,’ Mrs Zhen said.

Gu Jing heard Zhen Lang’s name and she stayed in her home.

‘Gu Jing, hurry up and come out. Let’s eat your birthday cake together,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing didn’t want to eat cake with Zhen Lang. She didn’t want to see him, talk to him or eat anything sweet with him!

Gu Jing stuffed the birthday cake icing in her mouth to block out the voices from outside her room.

Mr and Mrs Gu, Mr and Mrs Zhen and Zhen Lang walked into Gu Jing’s room. They saw half a cake missing and Gu Jing who hugged her stomach and hunched over a chair.

‘Gu Jing, here is your birthday gift...’ Zhen Lang said. He heard Gu Jing groaned in pain and he dropped the gift he got her on the floor. He rushed over to her. ‘What’s wrong?’

‘You don’t need to care,’ Gu Jing said. She felt her stomach tightened. She forced her eyes open and she pushed Zhen Lang away. ‘I know how hateful you are. You’re troublesome, seeing you makes me sick.’

‘What are you saying?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Zhen Lang wiped icing off Gu Jing’s face, but she pushed him away. He didn’t get a chance to say anything else, because their parents rushed to Gu Jing’s side.

‘Daddy... my stomach hurts,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Hurts?’ Mr and Mrs Gu and Mr and Mrs Zhen asked and they looked at the half missing cake and they understood why Gu Jing had a stomach ache. They carried Gu Jing to the hospital.

Zhen Lang wanted to hold Gu Jing's hand, but she pushed his hand away.

That year Gu Jing spent her birthday at the hospital, and she couldn't go to the national team trial the day after her birthday. She spent those days running to the toilet. The doctors and nurses spun a legend about the little girl and the birthday cake based on her birthday cake incident.

Mr and Mrs Gu and Mr and Mrs Zhen were relieved Gu Jing's condition stabilised after a few days. They needed to go to work and take care of housework so they left Gu Jing alone in her hospital room.

Gu Jing sat on her hospital bed and she felt depressed. She had nothing left, no friends and no national team trial that she dreamt of for many years. She wasn't someone who liked to cry, but her heart felt disappointment and emptiness.

Zhen Lang stood in front of Gu Jing's hospital room. 'Gu Jing.'

'What are you doing here?' Gu Jing asked.

Gu Jing saw Zhen Lang and her sadness and frustrations turned to rage.

'I came here to visit you,' Zhen Lang said. He put his school bag on a table and he stepped toward Gu Jing's bed. 'And aunty and uncle Gu asked me to tutor you.'

'I don't need anything! I don't care what my parents said and I don't care what you said to my parents. I don't need anything, I don't need you to visit me, I don't need tutoring and in the future I don't want to see you again!' Gu Jing said.

Gu Jing took out her anger she held back for a few days on Zhen Lang. Her parents thought she was gluttonous and his parents thought she was childish but no one thought the trouble maker was Zhen Lang.

'It's your fault I don't have friends. It's your fault I can't go to the national trial. What else do you want? Zhen Lang, I promise after I recover there will be a day I'll make you taste disappointment,' Gu Jing said.

'Is that so?' Zhen Lang asked. He saw Gu Jing's lively complexion returned and he smiled. 'Do you have that ability?'

Zhen Lang didn't explain anything to Gu Jing, because he knew what she needed wasn't an explanation, she needed motivation.

‘Who says I don’t have that ability?’ Gu Jing asked. She jumped off the bed. She grabbed Zhen Lang’s school bag. ‘Isn’t it just school work?’

Zhen Lang took out school text books and he sat next to Gu Jing on the bed.

‘I’m letting you know from today onwards, you and I won’t walk on the same path. I’ll never forgive you, I won’t go to school or go tutoring with you anymore. I don’t care what my parents think. I won’t let you live a peaceful life,’ Gu Jing said.

After Gu Jing returned to school a rumour spread around the school that the childhood sweethearts Gu Jing and Zhen Lang became childhood enemies.

Gu Jing turned into a diligent student and she trained vigorously for the next national team trial because she didn’t want to give Zhen Lang another opportunity to mock her.

Many school girls asked Gu Jing to pass love letters to Zhen Lang. Gu Jing didn’t hesitate to rip the love letters to pieces then she gave it to Zhen Lang. But Zhen Lang had perceptive eyes so she couldn’t do anything more excessive than ripping his love letters.

Gu Jing’s rivalry with Zhen Lang lasted throughout their high school years. School girls were afraid to go near Zhen Lang and Zhen Lang persuaded Gu Jing’s parents not to let Gu Jing go to the next national team trial.

Many years later Gu Jing sat on the floor of her childhood room. She packed her belongings to hers and Zhen Lang’s home in their hometown. But it was more accurate to say their home in their hometown was an extension of their parents’ homes. If they visited their parents they would eat downstairs and sleep upstairs.

It was because the Zhen household was rich, Mr Zhen didn’t want his son and daughter-in-law’s home in their hometown to be far away from their childhood home. So Mr Zhen paid for an extension floor to their childhood home and he planned to convert his son and daughter-in-law’s childhood rooms into nursery rooms for his future grandchildren.

Gu Jing loved her childhood home and she knew no matter how many children she and Zhen Lang had in the future, there would always be enough rooms for



their children.

Gu Jing took out an old dusty wrapped box from under her childhood bed, and she carefully unwrapped the box.

Gu Jing opened the box and inside were no valuable items. Most of it were her old tournament awards, old toys and childhood memorabilia. It made her reminisce about her foolish childhood years.

Under old books and pens her eyes were attracted to a little box she didn't recognise. She opened the little box, it was a blue snow globe. Finally she remembered it was the snow globe Zhen Lang got her for her birthday that year she missed her first national team trial. Because at that time she was angry at Zhen Lang, she only glanced once at the snow globe and put it back in its little box.

Gu Jing thanked the heavens she didn't throw Zhen Lang's snow globe in the bin. She didn't expect the person she hated for many years would become her husband, the closest person to her and also her... she bit her lips and she smiled.

Gu Jing held the snow globe. Inside the snow globe was a boy and girl figurines who faced each other and held hands. She shook the snow globe and a snow storm slowly fell on the beautiful boy and girl figurines.

No matter how Gu Jing looked at the boy and girl figurines, she thought they looked like Zhen Lang and herself. She saw words engraved on top of the snow globe – 'I only need your smile, Zhen Lang.'

After the snow storm stopped Gu Jing propped her chin on her knees and she shook the snow globe again. She stared at it in a daze. She thought it was true, as long as she smiled Zhen Lang would easily agree with her. Her foot accidentally knocked the little box and she heard there was something else inside the little box. She put the snow globe on the floor and she picked up the little box.

Gu Jing took out a faded yellow note. The words scribbled on the yellow note looked rushed, but the letters were still elegant and she was certain it was Zhen Lang's handwriting – 'After today, Zhen Lang is willing to protect Gu Jing forever, I'll be by her side and trust her.'

Gu Jing thought Zhen Lang had always been by her side and protected her. It

was always what he wanted and he never wavered.

Zhen Lang walked into his wife's childhood room. 'Done packing? Let me hold the packed boxes.'

Gu Jing looked up at Zhen Lang and from the floor she felt he looked taller and more handsome.

Gu Jing remembered Zhen Lang's words on the note and she puckered her lips. 'Mr Vet.'

Zhen Lang sat behind his wife and he wrapped his arms around her waist. 'What is it? Why are you suddenly meek?'

Zhen Lang's wife laid her head on his shoulder and she laughed happily. He kissed her lips for a while.

Gu Jing picked up the snow globe, she shook it and she smiled. 'Confess, how long have you secretly loved me?'

'Secretly loved you?' Zhen Lang asked. He saw the note in his wife's hand and he took the note from her. 'Whose handwriting is this? It's really ugly.'

'I want to know too. It seems like this person loves me deeply. I've decided I'm going to marry this person, but I don't know who this person is,' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang pulled his wife onto his lap and he hugged her. 'It's too late for you to marry someone else. You're my wife and you're pregnant with my child. If you dare runaway, be careful I don't tell uncle Xie you stole something of mine without permission.'

On the inside Gu Jing cursed her husband. 'Stolen something from you? Stole your child? Took your sperm without your permission? Aren't you the little demon? Each time it's always this position and that position. It's your fault my years and months of freedom are destroyed.'

'Be careful the floor is cold,' Zhen Lang said. He put his wife's legs on his legs. 'Foolish little girl, I love you this much but you saw me as your enemy. If I didn't give into you then wouldn't I abstain for the rest of my life?'

Gu Jing thought if her husband abstained for longer than twenty-five years then she wouldn't know where to retreat. But she thought her husband's skills

didn't seem like someone who abstained for many years.

‘Don't think too much,’ Zhen Lang said. He pinched his wife's cheeks. ‘A smart person in the modern era can research about anything.’

Gu Jing let go of her suspicions about why her husband's skills didn't match with someone who abstained for many years. She thought what he said was reasonable since he studied about the human body. But how could he explain about his kissing skills? Each time he kissed her she felt breathless and his kisses drove her crazy.

Gu Jing pulled her husband's shirt collar. ‘Confess, that year what did you and Chen Wei do? Did you do... do... do...’

‘Do, do, do?’ Zhen Lang asked. He pretended he didn't know what his wife wanted to ask. He stood and he pulled her up. ‘Are you hungry? I'll take you to eat at a restaurant, don't starve my child.’

Gu Jing felt a little hungry and she rubbed her stomach. ‘Mr Vet, I want to eat cake.’

Zhen Lang tripped over his foot. Luckily he didn't cause his loveable wife to fall. ‘Aren't you the one who vomits if you eat sweet food?’

Gu Jing shrugged her shoulders. ‘I don't know. Perhaps because I'm pregnant my cravings changed. It doesn't matter, right now I want to eat cake. Our child wants to eat lollipops, chocolate, ice-cream...’

Zhen Lang heard his wife's cravings and it made him anxious.

Gu Jing saw the anxiety on her husband's face and she felt it was worth being pregnant with his child.

Gu Jing rubbed her flat stomach and she telepathically spoke to her child – ‘My loving child, in this lifetime your mummy has no hope to defeat your daddy in a fight. I'll need to rely on you, don't disappoint your mummy, ok?’

\*\*\*

End of Side Story Four (Part 2 of 2)

***Related***

# Side Story Five

## Side Story Five

On a warm spring day at Zhen Lang and Lin Tu Shen's old school, sunlight shone on a footpath and reflected off a lake.

Lin Tu Shen looked into the lake and he contemplated for a long time. His reflection cast a lonely figure above the lake surface.

'How does it feel to be back here? Are you reminiscing about the past? Are you remembering an old love under a shady tree?' Zhen Lang asked.

Lin Tu Shen's eyes returned from past memories. 'Um. I'm remembering our old love. Do you want to recreate our time in bed together?'

Zhen Lang and Lin Tu Shen looked at each other and they laughed about their past.

'We have an hour until we need to make our speeches, I'm going for a stroll,' Zhen Lang said. He looked at the lake for a while and he winked at Lin Tu Shen. 'Do you want to go on a stroll with me? It'll give the students here another surprise.'

'Go to hell!' Lin Tu Shen cursed. He laughed and shook his head. 'I want to stay here and reflect for a while.'

Zhen Lang nodded his head, put his hands in his pants pockets and he walked leisurely. He wasn't a nosey person and didn't like to pry into another person's secrets. But he guessed the look in Lin Tu Shen's eyes related to an unresolved past incident and he knew it was best to give Lin Tu Shen private time to reflect by the lake.

Like Lin Tu Shen, the school conjured old memories in Zhen Lang's heart. Zhen Lang thought about how he secretly wanted his wife to go to the same college as him.

'Zhen Lang! I heard you want to go to the best college in the city,' Chen Wei said.

Zhen Lang turned around and he glanced at the girl who called his name. He remembered her name was Chen Wei, because her name appeared under his name on the exam bulletin board.

Zhen Lang smiled politely. 'The teachers chose the college for me.'

'Today the teachers spoke to me too. They said I should go to the best city college too. Then we can still be classmates,' Chen Wei said.

Zhen Lang wrinkled his forehead and he spoke politely. 'Then do your best with your studies.'

Chen Wei blushed. 'What do you want to study in college?'

'Medicine,' Zhen Lang said and he reflected for a while. 'I want to take care of the people close to me.'

Zhen Lang's mum had a heart condition and his dad encouraged him to study medicine. But his dad left the final decision to him.

Zhen Lang's eyes looked past Chen Wei. His eyes focused on the rowdy group of trainers in the distance. He thought the atmosphere was always lively wherever Gu Jing was.

'Hey, Gu Jing are you going to participate in the competition with our rival school? You should because you'll definitely win,' a student asked.

Gu Jing unlocked her bike chain and she jumped on her bike. 'I'm not going to compete. I need to pass all the entrance exams to go to the best college in the city. I'm going home to prepare for the theory exams.'

Gu Jing's thoughts were consumed with passing all the entrance exams to go to the best college in the city so she can continue to compete with Zhen Lang to death.

Gu Jing immersed herself in the taste of victory within her grasp that she didn't notice two students in the distance, one of which was Zhen Lang who she hated to the point it made her arms and legs itchy.

'You're a filial son,' Chen Wei praised.

Zhen Lang watched Gu Jing ride away on her bike and he smiled. 'It appears that way.'

Zhen Lang wanted to take care of his mum's weak heart, and he wanted to take care of Gu Jing too. Gu Jing was restless, reckless and she didn't take good care of her injuries. She needed someone to take care of the injuries on her body. He knew Gu Jing passed the practical exams to get into the best college in the city, but he wasn't certain if she could pass the theory exams.

'In the future I'll need to bother you,' Chen Wei said shyly.

Chen Wei didn't dare to look at the dazzling smile on Zhen Lang's face, she turned around and she walked away embarrassed.

Zhen Lang jumped on his bike and he pedalled home. He pedalled for ten minutes and he saw the back of Gu Jing's short hair. She was sitting on the ground and checking her bike.

Zhen Lang braked and put his feet on the ground to steady his bike. 'Gu Jing, what happened?'

Gu Jing raised her head, she saw Zhen Lang and she mumbled an incoherent curse.

'Do you want me to help you with anything?' Zhen Lang asked in a teasing tone familiar to Gu Jing.

Gu Jing glared at the hateful Zhen Lang and she took a deep breath to calm herself. 'I knew a jinx like you was nearby otherwise the wheel chain on my bike wouldn't come off for no reason.'

'I need to keep my distance from you to stay away from your unlucky aura,' Zhen Lang said teasingly.

Gu Jing cracked her knuckles. 'If you don't want to eat a knuckle sandwich then keep your distance.'

Zhen Lang pedalled two metres away from Gu Jing. Suddenly he braked, turned around and he smiled at Gu Jing. 'Are you actually taking the best college in the city's entrance exams?'

Gu Jing's facial expression darkened. 'It's none of your business.'

'You're lucky you passed the practical exams. But you still need to pass the theory exams. I recommend you quit to avoid embarrassing yourself,' Zhen Lang

said in a mocking tone familiar to Gu Jing.

Gu Jing's face flushed. Unlike other school girls, she wasn't shy in front of Zhen Lang. She only regretted she couldn't rip the hateful smile off Zhen Lang's face.

Gu Jing struggled to pass the practical exams. But she wasn't going to let the hateful Zhen Lang deter her from her goal to study photography at the best college in the city.

'Be careful the wind doesn't blow your tongue away. We haven't taken the theory exams yet, why are you so sure of yourself?' Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang waved textbooks in the air. 'The teachers gave me pointers what's likely to be in my theory exams. As long as I study of course I'll pass my theory exams. Besides...' Zhen Lang said. He winked at Gu Jing. 'I already received a scholarship. I just need to think about after another month I can be far away from you, don't need see you anymore and I'll be very happy. Why don't you turn back and go compete before it's too late and they stop accepting participants.'

Gu Jing breathed heavily. She quickly fixed the wheel chain on her bike then she jumped on her bike and rode away from the Zhen Lang's smug face.

At home Gu Jing studied. She flipped one page after another page. Her heart only needed to think about Zhen Lang's smugness and it motivated her to continue studying. She thought it wasn't none of Zhen Lang's business whether she could pass her theory exams or not. There was no need for him to rub it in her face that he received a scholarship! She was determined to pass her theory exams for Zhen Lang to see!

The day college letters were sent to senior students, at Gu Jing's home the whole of upstairs and downstairs were shaken. No one was surprised Zhen Lang received an acceptance letter from the best college in the city. Everyone was surprised Gu Jing who wasn't an academic scholar, managed to get into the same college as Zhen Lang and her theory exam scores were two points above the college acceptance benchmark.

The following two days after Gu Jing received her college acceptance letter, the front door of her home was nearly knocked down. Many neighbouring people came to see the miraculous Gu Jing, and they wanted to put her on an

operating table to dissect her.

The numerous praises resonated in Gu Jing's brain and she felt overwhelmed. She escaped to quiet place outside her home, sat on the ground and took deep breaths. She looked at her pitiful swollen, black and blue arms from excessive praises. She rubbed her sore cheeks and sighed.

'Not bad,' Zhen Lang praised. 'We have an affinity with each other.'

Gu Jing didn't need to look at the jinx's face to know the hateful voice belonged to Zhen Lang. 'Who has affinity with you?'

Zhen Lang's back leaned against a wall. 'Gu Jing, are you secretly in love with me? What other reason is there for you to stake your life to study at the same college as me?'

Gu Jing like an enraged little kitten jumped off the ground. 'I'm secretly in love with you?'

Zhen Lang laughed softly. 'Isn't it true?'

'That's right, I'm secretly in love with you. I really love you!' Gu Jing said sarcastically. She fisted her hands. 'Right now I regret I can't rip off your clothes and lay on you...'

Gu Jing wanted to skin Zhen Lang, take out his intestines, drink his blood and tear his body into pieces! She was emotionally overwhelmed and nearly choked on her saliva. She took a deep breath and she wanted to say everything but suddenly she heard aunty Zhen's voice.

'Gu Jing...' Mrs Zhen said. 'Aunty and uncle's Zhen Lang has always belonged to you. But you're only seventeen, isn't it too soon?'

Gu Jing fell on her bottom and she swallowed her curses. 'Aunty... aunty Zhen?'

Gu Jing turned her head around and she saw aunty and uncle Zhen and her parents. There were also their neighbouring friends who stood behind her and heard her 'love declaration.'

'Listen to your dad, I think there is no need to wait until after your graduation to love someone. But right now don't you think it's too soon?' Mr Gu said.



‘It’s ok,’ Mrs Gu said. She crossed her arms. ‘They can love each other and take care of each other. But...’ She glared fiercely at her daughter. ‘You can only love Zhen Lang. You’re not allowed to force yourself on Zhen Lang.’

‘It’s ok, Gu Jing you can force yourself on Zhen Lang,’ Mr Zhen said. ‘You have my permission to force yourself on Zhen Lang as long as you use protection.’

Gu Jing’s teary eyes looked at the different pairs of eyes that didn’t give her the chance to explain about their misunderstanding.

Zhen Lang silently stood next to Gu Jing. He pretended to smile like someone who felt shy about receiving a love declaration in front of his parents, aunty and uncle Gu and the neighbouring guests.

Two days after Gu Jing’s ‘love declaration,’ rumours about her being secretly in love with Zhen Lang spread to her college. Everyone knew Gu Jing, whether high in the sky or deep in the ocean she wanted to follow Zhen Lang. Gu Jing’s ‘love declaration’ was forever immortalised at her college.

\*\*\*

End of Side Story Five

***Related***

# part 1

## Side Story Six (Part 1)

‘One, two, one, two...’ master said.

Zhen Lang watched Gu Jing trained from a distance. He saw her flushed face and her short hair fluttered in the wind.

Suddenly Gu Jing stood still. She looked at her surroundings for Zhen Lang, she didn’t see him but she thought she sniffed his scent.

‘Gu Jing, pay attention,’ master said.

Gu Jing doubted she was mistaken but she resumed training.

Zhen Lang saw Gu Jing’s confused look from under a peach tree and he smiled.

‘Zhen Lang!’ Chen Wei said.

Zhen Lang politely nodded his head. ‘Hello.’

‘I’m in the same year as you but in a different class,’ Chen Wei said.

‘I know,’ Zhen Lang said and he walked away from the girl.

‘You know?’ Chen Wei asked and she followed Zhen Lang.

‘Um. On the exam results bulletin your name is under mine,’ Zhen Lang said.

‘Oh,’ Chen Wei said.

Zhen Lang saw the look of disappointment on the girl’s face, but he only wanted to keep his distance from her.

‘Zhen Lang, can I ask you a favour?’ Chen Wei asked and she brisk walked to catch up to Zhen Lang.

Zhen Lang waved the books in his hand. ‘Sorry, a teacher is waiting for me. You can ask me another day.’

Chen Wei swallowed her words. She nodded her head and she watched Zhen Lang walked away from her.

Zhen Lang walked to the nurse’s office. He sat on a bed, thought about Gu Jing

and he smiled.

‘Today I heard you’re with the school’s beauty. Why didn’t you tell me about her? Scared I’ll steal her away from you?’ Lin Tu Shen said.

Zhen Lang laughed. ‘I only bumped into her on the way here and said a few words to her. Where did you hear this rumour from?’

‘Really?’ Lin Tu Shen asked. He laughed skeptically. ‘Do you think I care about rumours? If the female lead didn’t admit it then why would I come here and ask you?’

Zhen Lang wrinkled his forehead. ‘She said that?’

Lin Tu Shen sat next to Zhen Lang. ‘You’re good at keeping secrets. If Chen Wei didn’t announce you’re her boyfriend in front of everyone then I wouldn’t know you kept me out of the loop.’

Zhen Lang frowned. ‘In front of everyone?’

‘Of course...’ Lin Tu Shen said.

A gentle wind blew into the room through an opened door.

‘Can I speak with Zhen Lang?’ Chen Wei asked.

Lin Tu Shen pretended he didn’t know anything. ‘I’m going to go eat something. I’ll be back in two hours.’

Lin Tu Shen left Zhen Lang alone with Chen Wei who blushed.

‘I’m sorry. I didn’t do it on purpose. Recently someone is pursuing me and I didn’t know how to reject him. Coincidentally he saw me while I was walking with you. He asked me if you were my boyfriend, I didn’t want him to linger so I said you were my boyfriend,’ Chen Wei said.

‘Oh,’ Zhen Lang said.

Chen Wei’s heart relaxed and her eyes shone with hope. ‘If you care about it then I’ll explain clearly, but...’

Chen Wei took a step closer toward Zhen Lang. But he silently drank a glass of iced tea like there was nothing to discuss.

Chatter and laughter were heard outside the quiet room.

‘Don’t you have anything to say?’ Chen Wei asked. The silence in the room made her anxious. ‘Can you say something?’

Zhen Lang put the glass of iced tea on a table. ‘Didn’t you say you’ll explain clearly? What else is there for me to say?’

Zhen Lang’s words shocked Chen Wei and she became speechless.

‘Are you saying you coincidentally bumped into me today? I stood under that tree for fifteen minutes before you ran to me to say hello. I think you’re capable of gently rejecting an unwanted pursuer. If you want a buffer then I think there are others around you who are willing to be your buffer,’ Zhen Lang said. His eyes saw straight through Chen Wei. ‘You didn’t need to lie in front of everyone I was your boyfriend.’

‘Then can you be my boyfriend?’ Chen Wei asked.

Chen Wei took a deep breath. It took a lot of courage for her to ask Zhen Lang to be her boyfriend. She always took pride in being the smartest student in her old high school. But since she moved to the same high school as Zhen Lang in her senior year, his name was always first on the exam results bulletin and also in her heart.

Chen Wei was secretly infatuated with Zhen Lang for months. She took the opportunity to speak to Zhen Lang but only after speaking a few words with him, he saw straight through her. It left her no choice but to be upfront about her intentions.

Zhen Lang smiled politely. His smile always dazzled others except for Gu Jing.

‘No,’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang’s one word destroyed Chen Wei’s hope. ‘You...’

Chen Wei saw the cold look in Zhen Lang’s eyes and she felt the distance between them was vast.

‘You should explain clearly in front of everyone. You’re a good girl, you shouldn’t toy with your reputation,’ Zhen Lang said.

Chen Wei didn’t want to hear Zhen Lang say anything else. She turned around and she ran outside.

Zhen Lang didn't chase after Chen Wei. He picked up the glass of iced tea and he stood in front of the window that gave a good view of the Taekwondo pupils training. He drank iced tea, watched Gu Jing trained and he smiled.

A few of months later Chen Wei thought Zhen Lang wasn't in a rush to clear the rumour caused by her that they were dating. So the rumour of them dating spread like a kite that met wind throughout the high school. It gave her a glimmer of hope that perhaps that day Zhen Lang was only angry at her for lying and he didn't want to treat her heartlessly.

Chen Wei let go of her pride and she took another opportunity to confess to Zhen Lang.

'Chen Wei, stop wasting your time on me. Go home,' Zhen Lang said.

'Do you not like me even a little?' Chen Wei asked.

'Chen Wei, last time I told you clearly. I still hope you can explain clearly in front of everyone,' Zhen Lang said.

Chen Wei's eyes became teary. 'Am I not good enough?'

'You're good,' Zhen Lang said.

'Then why-' Chen Wei said.

'In this world there are many good things. I can't want everything that is good. It can't be forced, right?' Zhen Lang said.

'I don't want to break up,' Chen Wei said in her state of delusion.

'Have we held hands?' Zhen Lang asked. He shook his head, sighed helplessly and he walked away from Chen Wei. 'I'm sorry, I think in the future you shouldn't come and look for me.'

'You have someone in your heart, right?' Chen Wei asked.

Zhen Lang didn't hesitate to nod his head. 'Yes.'

'Then I'm going to say you cheated on me. The last few months everyone thinks we're lovers. I won't explain anything. If you say anything then you'll become someone who plays with a girl's heart. The girl you like will become someone who broke up a couple's relationship,' Chen Wei said.

Zhen Lang stood still but he didn't turn his head around. 'It's up to you what you say or don't say. I'll only give you one advice, a girl's reputation is precious and it's not something you should carelessly destroy.'

Chen Wei bit her lips and she silently cried as she watched Zhen Lang walked away from her.

During a semester break Gu Jing trained at school for a tournament so Zhen Lang studied at their school too.

'Gu Jing, hurry up and run a few more rounds,' master said.

The school's taekwondo club put all their hopes of winning the tournament on Gu Jing's shoulders.

Lin Tu Shen went to school to look for Zhen Lang. He found Zhen Lang in the nurse's office and he threw a beer can at Zhen Lang. 'It's this hot and you can still drink tea. You suffer from a calmness ocd.'

Zhen Lang laughed and he opened a beer can. Lin Tu Shen sat next to Zhen Lang and he took a sip of beer.

'You're too muddled. You had a girlfriend who wouldn't care about the heat and willing to wash your clothes for you. Even if you don't love her you didn't need to dump her too soon. You had the school beauty as your girlfriend, many boys dream about being her boyfriend but it's impossible for them,' Lin Tu Shen said.

Zhen Lang smiled but his eyes were icy cold. 'Is that so?'

The days Zhen Lang stayed at school to study, Chen Wei also stayed at school and she became more of a nuisance for Zhen Lang.

Li Tu Shen shrugged his shoulders and he lost interest in discussing about Chen Wei. 'Zhen Lang, do you know a girl in your class named Gu Jing? I heard you and her also went to the same elementary school.'

Zhen Lang gripped the beer can in his hand, but he kept a poker face. 'What is it?'

'I want to pursue her,' Lin Tu Shen said.

'You and her spent time together?' Zhen Lang asked and the shock in his eyes

was obvious.

Lin Tu Shen nodded his head. 'Once. I think a girl like her is rare. She doesn't have many expectations toward boys, she's not materialistic or value money and she's independent. You know I hate clingy girls. Tell me, can you give me a hand and help me?'

'Help?' Zhen Lang asked. He smiled brightly and he quickly nodded his head. 'How do you want me to help you?'

Lin Tu Shen winked. 'Use your status as a long time classmate to ask her out to meet me and I'll take care of everything else.'

'Next month is her birthday,' Zhen Lang said.

Lin Tu Shen's eyes lit up. 'What birthday gifts will she like?'

Zhen Lang thought the little girl loved to hit people and Lin Tu Shen didn't own enough nerves. Zhen Lang drank a sip of beer. 'She's especially responsive to sweets.'

'What are you thinking about?' Lin Tu Shen asked.

Lin Tu Shen's voice broke Zhen Lang reminiscing about the past.

'You look more dazed than me. Are you bankrupt and you can't find enough money to buy milk and nappies after your child is born?' Lin Tu Shen asked.

'If I'm bankrupt I can always rely on you. You make enough to support me, after all we're old lovers,' Zhen Lang said.

'Enough. Don't think I don't know what happened that year. You're not someone who can be drunk after two beers. You used me as your buffer for many years but you didn't compensate me for breaking my heart. Those years were too cruel, my reputation was destroyed,' Lin Tu Shen said.

'I hate it when someone is a nuisance and bothers me. I didn't want my wife's reputation destroyed by being falsely accused as breaking up a non-existent relationship that year,' Zhen Lang said. He patted Lin Tu Shen's shoulder. 'We both needed to be each other's buffer, besides you're not completely innocent. Don't talk about compensation for breaking your heart, be careful I don't expose you.'

Zhen Lang and Lin Tu Shen looked at each other and they laughed.

Two boys ran passed Zhen Lang and Lin Tu Shen.

‘Hurry up, it’s rare big sister visits our school to teach us. It’s no time to dillydally!’ the first boy said.

Another student rubbed their sleepy eyes. ‘Who’s big sister?’

‘What other big sister is there? It’s the big sister that won many tournaments in the past. Our principal asked big sister to train us before our tournament. Hurry up, we need to get there early,’ the first boy said.

Zhen Lang and Lin Tu Shen looked at each other in disbelief.

Lin Tu Shen smiled. ‘The big sister the two boys were talking about, is it...’

Zhen Lang took a deep breath. ‘Yes, it’s her!’

Zhen Lang thought apart from his wife who else dares to run around wild behind his back.

Lin Tu Shen put his hand on his forehead. ‘If I remember correctly, isn’t she...’

Zhen Lang’s complexion darkened. ‘You remembered correctly.’

Lin Tu Shen shook his head. ‘I got to hand it to you, you give her too much freedom.’

‘Do you think I want to? What am I supposed to do? Tie her up and beat her? Don’t forget, if I make any sudden moves then she’ll laugh until she’s unconscious. In the end whose bones do you think she’ll take out her anger on?’ Zhen Lang said.

Zhen Lang’s strides toward the training venue betrayed his calm voice.

Lin Tu Shen looked at his wrist watch. He shook his head and he empathised with Zhen Lang. ‘It appears this time I’ll be the only guest speaker.

\*\*\*

End of Side Story Six (Part 1)

***Related***



## part 2

### Side Story Six (Part 2 of 2)

Inside the training venue the pupils sat in a circle around Gu Jing.

‘You turned too slow. It’ll create an opportunity for your opponent to attack one of your vulnerable spots,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Master said it’s the right move to affect the opponent’s mentality,’ the first pupil said.

Gu Jing waved a hand at the first pupil. ‘Attack me and see if you’re right.’

‘Big sister, you’re a girl,’ the first pupil said.

‘Come here!’ Gu Jing ordered.

The first pupil saw Gu Jing’s sharp dagger eyes and he felt nervous.

‘If you don’t dare to look at me, aren’t you scared I’ll ambush you? Use the same kick as before!’ Gu Jing said.

The first pupil kicked, Gu Jing took one side step and she kicked his vulnerable left side. He stumbled back two steps.

‘If you don’t turn faster than your opponent will easily kick you off balance. This time use the same kick but turn faster,’ Gu Jing said.

The first pupil kicked in the direction of Gu Jing’s waist and she side stepped to avoid his kick. She kicked his waist and he fell onto the floor.

‘Wow!’ a chorus of pupils praised.

‘This isn’t an action movie. You need to turn faster so it doesn’t give your opponent time to anticipate your next move,’ Gu Jing said.

‘Big sister, can’t you use less force? Your kick hurts to death,’ the first pupil said and he rubbed his waist.

Gu Jing smiled. ‘Inside the tournament arena there are no close friends or relatives, there are only opponents. I use even more force to hit my husband. Who’s next? I want to see each of your fighting skills.’

A second pupil attacked Gu Jing and she effortlessly defeated him.

The other pupils who watched Gu Jing fight their classmates all thought it was a rumour that the skilful fighter Gu Jing had a gentle heart and cared about her little martial arts siblings. Because if they continued to be defeated by Gu Jing then they would be at home recovering from their injuries and miss the tournament.

‘Big sister, how can our fighting skills compare to yours?’ a third pupil asked.

‘Just because your opponent has a little more experience than you makes you scared. Then there is no point training and competing in tournaments, because you have no tenacity. Who’s next?’ Gu Jing said.

A fourth pupil bravely stood and he kicked Gu Jing. She kicked at his vulnerable chest, but in a blink of an eye her body tensed when she saw her husband inside the training venue.

Gu Jing shivered, she was dead because Zhen Lang caught her and she forgot about the fourth pupil.

The fourth pupil kicked in the direction of Gu Jing’s stomach, but Zhen Lang was faster. Zhen Lang hugged Gu Jing, he kicked the fourth pupil and the fourth student fell on the floor.

Zhen Lang caressed his wife’s cheek and he smiled coldly.

Gu Jing avoided her husband’s intense eyes.

‘Didn’t you say if you don’t dare to look at your opponent then you’ll be the first to lose? Look at me,’ Zhen Lang said.

Gu Jing looked at her husband’s shoes. ‘You didn’t take off your shoes. You can’t attack with shoes on.’

Zhen Lang saw his stubborn wife still avoided eye contact with him and he smiled. ‘In the morning you promised you would stay at home and not run around. You said you wouldn’t even go to the studio and promised you wouldn’t leave the front door.’

‘Today didn’t you say you needed to go make an oral presentation?’ Gu Jing said softly.

‘An oral presentation at the school,’ Zhen Lang said. He gently rubbed his wife’s little baby bump. ‘If I didn’t come here then I wouldn’t catch you secretly running around. Since you did something wrong, what’s your punishment?’

‘I’ll wash dishes, wash clothes, clean the floors and anything my loving husband requests,’ Gu Jing said.

Zhen Lang sighed helplessly. ‘Yesterday you made a racket and said you wanted to eat seafood rice combination. Today I wanted to take you to a seafood restaurant after work. But I’m not going to take you anymore.’

Gu Jing wrapped her arms around her husband’s neck. ‘I want to eat.’

‘Then do you want to go now?’ Zhen Lang asked and he put out a hand in front of his wife.

‘Yes,’ Gu Jing said and she obediently held her husband’s hand.

The moment Gu Jing’s husband held her hand she forgot about her little martial arts sibling. She watched her husband put on her sneakers and he carefully tied her shoelaces.

‘Big sister, what about us?’ a chorus of pupils asked.

‘Oh!’ Gu Jing said. She pulled her husband’s jacket sleeve. ‘I promised I would train them before their tournament.’

‘You still want to train them?’ Zhen Lang asked.

Gu Jing smiled sweetly at her husband’s stern face. ‘I won’t train them anymore.’

Gu Jing looked regretfully at her little martial arts siblings.

‘Big brother Zhen Lang,’ a fifth pupil said. He finally remembered the identity of big sister Gu Jing’s husband and he stood in front of big brother Zhen Lang. ‘Big brother, you’re also a brilliant fighter and master’s pupil. Do you want to see your little martial arts siblings lose? I hope you’ll let big sister Gu Jing teach us a few moves for a little while and it won’t interfere with big brother and big sister’s plans.’

Zhen Lang looked coldly at the fifth pupil. ‘It’s not a problem if your big sister train you, but you need to wait another five months.’

‘Why another five months? The tournament will end within five months,’ the fifth pupil said.

‘Because...’ Zhen Lang said. He looked at his wife who avoided eye contact with him and she didn’t dare to say a word. ‘In another five months my wife will give birth to our child. After our child is born, she can hit anyone she wants. But right now she needs to be good.’

‘Oh...’ a chorus of pupils said and they stared in disbelief at their big sister Gu Jing’s stomach.

The pupils didn’t know their big sister Gu Jing was pregnant, because her baggy taekwondo uniform concealed her stomach.

Zhen Lang looked at his daring wife who earlier didn’t pay attention to the fourth pupil who almost kicked her stomach. He wondered how a normal person could control his wife.

‘Then can big sister Gu Jing instruct us verbally? Before we didn’t know big sister was pregnant. But we promise we won’t let big sister fight anymore,’ a sixth pupil pleaded.

Zhen Lang laughed. ‘Do you understand my wife more than me? My wife sees a fight like a dog sees a bone.’

Gu Jing stood next to her husband. She frowned and she glared at her husband.

The sixth pupil brushed his short hair and he smiled. He knew big brother Zhen Lang’s unflattering comparison was precise.

‘I promised them I would train them. If it wasn’t for you then I can fight and I wouldn’t be frustrated at home. It’s all your fault. In the future you’re not allowed to touch me anymore,’ Gu Jing said.

‘You want to stay here that much?’ Zhen Lang asked. He pinched his wife’s cheek. He recognised the look on his wife’s face meant she regretted she couldn’t bite him and he sighed. ‘Then how about you sit nearby and watch me train them?’

Gu Jing smiled sweetly and she nodded her head. ‘But I’m hungry.’

Zhen Lang pointed at the bag of food he put on the floor. 'It's a meat roll from the school's canteen, it used to be one of your favourites in the past. I bought it for you as a midnight meal, but you can eat it now.'

Gu Jing happily ate the meat roll like a hungry little puppy.

Zhen Lang took off his shoes and he put his jacket on the floor. 'Come here, let me see each of your fighting skills.'

Gu Jing ate and she watched her husband defeat their little martial arts siblings. 'Thank you little martial arts siblings. Today is the first time I can sit and watch my husband make moves against someone else.'

The pupils heard their big sister Gu Jing praise, but on the inside they were crying pitifully.

The first pupil that Gu Jing defeated suddenly sighed. 'I finally understand why big sister use all of your real physical strength to hit your husband.'

\*\*\*

End of Side Story Six (Part 2 of 2)

***Related***

# Side Story Seven

## Side Story Seven

‘Daddy,’ Zhen San Tian said.

Zhen San Tian’s round doll eyes lit up when he saw his daddy walked through the front door of their home.

‘San Tian is a good boy,’ Zhen Lang praised.

After Zhen San Tian welcomed his daddy home, he continued to piece together the puzzle on the coffee table.

Zhen San Tian looked like his daddy. He heard his mummy held him for three days after his birth, because she wanted to see if he inherited any of her features. His mummy turned him left and right for three days, but she didn’t see any of her features on him.

Most parents hoped their children were like Zhen San Tian. Zhen San Tian was a handsome and an obedient child.

Unlike most parents, Gu Jing hoped for a lively, strong and an energetic son. But she gave birth to a quiet and gentle son instead of a quiet and gentle daughter she desired. She didn’t expect she would give birth to a miniature Zhen Lang.

Zhen Lang looked at his beautiful wife who slept on the sofa. He saw the rosy complexion on her face and he knew his wife had a good dream. But the specks of ash on her cheeks and her messy hair made him suspicious.

Zhen Lang sat next to his son and he watched his son struggled to finish the puzzle. ‘What did mummy do today?’

‘Mummy said take away food is unhealthy so she wanted to cook me a loving lunch,’ Zhen San Tian said.

Zhen Lang glanced at the kitchen. The stove was burnt, water residue on the kitchen bench and there were dirty pots and pans in the kitchen sink.

Zhen Lang lifted his son onto his lap. ‘You can’t refuse your mum’s love.’

‘Mummy and I ate lunch at a restaurant,’ Zhen San Tian said.

Zhen San Tian held a puzzle piece in his hand, but he didn’t know where the right spot to put the puzzle piece was.

‘San Tian, there is no need to force yourself to think of a solution,’ Zhen Lang said. He took the puzzle piece from his son’s hand and he put it on the coffee table. ‘Let’s play something else together, ok?’

Zhen San Tian smiled at his daddy. ‘Today mummy didn’t train with me.’

Zhen Lang looked at his lovable wife who slept peacefully on the sofa for a while then he silently carried their son outside. He wanted to spend time with their son whilst she slept.

Outside on the lawn Zhen Lang waited for his son to attack him. His son punched him and he blocked the punch. Then his son kicked him and he stepped back to avoid the punch.

Zhen San Tian wasn’t satisfied he couldn’t hit his daddy. He punched and kicked faster, but his daddy was always faster.

Zhen Lang saw his son’s flushed face and sweat on his son’s forehead. His son breathed heavily, but he saw the tenacity in his son’s eyes and he smiled. Although his son had his eyes, but his son inherited his wife’s tenacity.

Zhen Lang thought it was a pity his wife only saw their son’s looks resembled him. If his wife looked closer then she would see their son’s personality resembled her.

Gu Jing slept on the sofa but she recognised the gentle sounds of her husband’s breathing the moment he walked through the front door. She didn’t allow herself to sleep deeply until her husband came home. No matter how tired she felt she wouldn’t leave their son unsupervised. But recently she felt increasingly tired and sleepy.

‘Mummy...’ Zhen San Tian called.

Zhen San Tian hugged his daddy’s leg and he waited for his mummy to wake up.

Gu Jing opened her eyes and she smiled at her loveable husband and son. Each

time she saw how much her son looked like her husband she would reminisce about the past.

Since Gu Jing and Zhen Lang's son was born, their son was loved and doted on by their son's grandparents. Gu Jing remembered her dad and dad-in-law wracked their brains and looked through many baby name books to find a suitable name for their first grandson.

Gu Jing inadvertently thought of her son's name when she first held her son in her arms. 'This little boy is worth a lot of money.'

Gu Jing smiled brightly at her son who she named Zhen San Tian, because his name sounded like a lot of money.

Zhen San Tian was three years old, but many times he recognised the way his mummy smiled at him looked suspicious.

Gu Jing thought regardless of how much her husband and son looked like each other or how smart her son was, he was still her son. She couldn't defeat her husband but she could tease her son.

Gu Jing thought if she and her husband had a second child perhaps she would name their second child Zhen Du Bian, which sounded like plenty of money. She smiled like a demoness. Of course if her second child was a sweet and an obedient girl then she would think of a different name for her daughter. She hoped her daughter would be beautiful and gentle.

Gu Jing's son ran to her and he rubbed his sweaty head on her chest. 'Mummy, hug me.'

Zhen Lang laughed at his son who tried to escape a bath. He lifted and carried his son toward the bathroom. 'That part of your mummy's body exclusively belongs to your daddy. That year your daddy said something special to your mummy to make her remember me for many years. If you want to land there then you need to find your own runway. Your daddy occupied your mummy's runway many years ago.'

'Zhen Lang!' Gu Jing cried out like a lioness.

Gu Jing jumped off the sofa, her fist brushed past Zhen Lang's face and dented a wall.



Zhen San Tian hugged his daddy tightly. ‘Daddy...’

Zhen Lang calmly carried his son to the bathroom. He took off his son’s clothes and he put his son into the bathtub of warm water. ‘It’s ok, coincidentally the kitchen needs renovating.’

Zhen Lang turned his head around and he looked at his loveable wife. ‘Recently your mood swings are abnormal. Come with me to the hospital tomorrow for a check-up. If the result is nothing then you’re allowed to give your arms and legs a workout.’

Gu Jing looked at her husband’s calm face and she believed he was right. She retrieved her fist from the wall and she didn’t dare to move her arms and legs carelessly.

Zhen San Tian played with the bubbles in the bathtub. The sunlight reflected off the bubbles and the bubbles turned to the seven colours of the rainbow. The bubbles flew above his wet hair and he laughed happily.

Zhen Lang and Gu Jing remembered a summer afternoon many years ago. Zhen Lang held a paper aeroplane in front of Gu Jing and he teased her. ‘Gu Jing, can I borrow your chest to land my plane?’

\*\*\*

End of Side Story Seven

***Related***